

Vol. 177, No. 3

Summer 2023

The NEHG Register



The Journal of
American Genealogy



Interior view of the New Bedford [Mass.] Meeting House. Many Rotch and Rodman descendants were members of the New Bedford Monthly Meeting (pp. 293–326).

NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC
GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY
AmericanAncestors.org

In this issue

Origins: Curtis, Lovett

Families: Luce, Rodman, Rotch,
Snelling, Thurber, Wheeler

\$20 per year, \$9.95 per issue

NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

AmericanAncestors.org

99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116-3007

Receipt of the *Register* is a benefit of NEHGS membership.

For membership information, call 888-296-3447, fax 617-536-7307,
or visit AmericanAncestors.org/join.

To advance the study of family history in America and beyond, the New England Historic Genealogical Society educates, inspires, and connects people through our scholarship, collections, and expertise.

THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORICAL AND GENEALOGICAL REGISTER

The New England Historical and Genealogical Register, published quarterly since 1847, is the flagship journal of American genealogy and the oldest journal in the field, supporting the purpose of the New England Historic Genealogical Society (AmericanAncestors.org). The complete *Register*, 1847 to present, is searchable as a database at AmericanAncestors.org.

Consulting Editors, 2023

ROBERT CHARLES ANDERSON, FASG • CHERRY FLETCHER BAMBERG, FASG

SCOTT ANDREW BARTLEY • CHRISTOPHER CHALLENGER CHILD

CHARLES M. HANSEN, FASG • GALE ION HARRIS, PH.D., FASG

DAVID ALLEN LAMBERT • RHONDA R. MCCLURE

NATHAN W. MURPHY, AG, FASG • GARY BOYD ROBERTS

GEORGE FREEMAN SANBORN JR., FASG • WILLIAM B. SAXBE, JR., CG, FASG

CLIFFORD L. STOTT, CG, FASG • NATHANIEL LANE TAYLOR, FASG

Submitting an article to the *Register*: The editors welcome articles, especially from new authors. Articles typically focus on New England, on out-migrations from New England, and on New York State; articles on other topics and areas (including those with an international scope) will also be considered. Articles treating nineteenth- and twentieth-century subject matter are most welcome.

Register articles usually fall into one of the following categories: immigrant origins with a genealogical summary; problem-solving articles with a genealogical summary; genealogical accounts of families, especially families for which no genealogy now exists [normally limited to three generations]; and source material.

Submission guidelines for authors are given at AmericanAncestors.org/browse/publications/the-register/submission-guidelines. Articles should be written in Microsoft Word. It is advisable to send an email to the editor, at register@nehgs.org, describing your proposed article.

Book Reviews: The *Register* reviews a limited number of books. Send books for consideration, with complete ordering information, to Editor of the *Register*, NEHGS, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, MA 02116.

Volume 177 Whole Number 707 Summer 2023

The New England Historical and Genealogical Register®

The Journal of American Genealogy

- 195 Editorial
- 197 The Wheeler and the Spokes: The Wells–Tapp–Tuttle Kinship: Discussing the Immigrants Anne¹ (Wells) Wheeler, Edmund¹ Tapp, Elizabeth¹ (Herbert) Corwin, John¹ Herbert, Richard¹ Tuttle, John¹ Tuttle, and William¹ Tuttle
Travis Dodge Miscia
- 225 The English Origin of Zacheus¹ Curtis of Salem, Reading, Gloucester, and Rowley, Massachusetts
Robert Battle
- 229 John Snelling of Boston, Massachusetts, and His Purported Uncle, Dr. William Snelling of Boston
Marjorie P. Snelling
- 234 The English Ancestry of Brothers William Fellows of Ipswich, Mass., and Richard Fellows of Hartford, Conn., and Springfield, Northampton, and Hadley, Mass.
Clifford L. Stott
- 245 The Family of Henry and Remember Luce of Martha's Vineyard
B. Darrell Jackson
- 258 The Lovett Family of Chesham, Buckinghamshire, Ancestors of Daniel¹ Lovett And His Half-Sister Elizabeth (Lovett) Twitchell, Wife of Joseph¹ Twitchell, of Massachusetts
Clifford L. Stott
- 262 The English Origins of John Thurber of Swansea in Plymouth Colony and His Descendants
*Florence Thurber Gargaro, Kathryn Davitt Peters, and Barry R. Smith
(concluded from 177:178)*
- 282 New England Articles in Genealogical Journals in 2021
- 293 The Rotches and the Rodmans: A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism
- 293 Part 1: Quakers in New England
Rhonda R. McClure
- 306 Part 2: Rotch and Rodman Families
Rhonda R. McClure
-

Editorial Staff

HENRY B. HOFF, CG, FASG, *Editor* (register@nehgs.org)

DAVID CURTIS DEARBORN, FASG, *Associate Editor*

Funding provided in part by



*This publication is supported
in part from a bequest by
Ruth Chauncey Bishop*



NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

AmericanAncestors.org

EXECUTIVE ADMINISTRATION

D. BRENTON SIMONS, *President and CEO*

RYAN J. WOODS, *Executive Vice President and Chief Operating Officer*

MEGHAN E. HALLOCK, *Vice President for Advancement*

BOARD OF TRUSTEES

DAVID MARTIN TREBING (DC), *Chair*

M. DAVID SHERRILL (NY), *Vice Chair*

BONNIE A. REILLY (IN), *Second Vice Chair*

JOHN E. CORCORAN (MA), *Treasurer*

GERARD A. HALPIN III (NY), *Secretary*

MARK KIMBALL NICHOLS (MA), *Corresponding Secretary*

2024

BRENDA L. JOHNSON (MN) • ANDREW P. LANGLOIS (CT) • JOHN S. RANDO, JR. (MA)

HELEN E. R. SAYLES (MA) • ELIZABETH B. VITTON (CT)

2025

ROBB ALEY ALLAN (FL) • NORDAHL L. BRUE (FL) • SUSAN E. CARLSON (AZ) • MARK T. COX IV (VA) • JONATHAN BUCK TREAT (MA) • NANCY CLAY WEBSTER (NE) • BRENDA M. WILLIAMS (MA)

2026

KELI D. LEVINE (CT) • JO ANNE C. MAKELY (MA) • NANCY S. MAULSBY (CT) • ERIC N. WARD (MA)

HONORARY TRUSTEES

JUDITH AVERY • BRUCE R. BARTLETT • JOHN G. L. CABOT • STEPHEN H. CASE • RALPH J. CRANDALL • JOHN M. FLEMING • WILLIAM M. FOWLER, JR. • JUDITH WAITE FREEMAN
DONALD R. FRIARY • HENRY LOUIS GATES, JR. • PRISCILLA C. GREENLEES • THOMAS B. HAGEN • JUDITH HUBER HALSETH • VIRGINIA M. HAMISTER • KENNETH E. HAUGHTON
ROBERT F. HENDRICKSON • ELIZABETH B. JOHNSON • AMBASSADOR JOHN LOEB • PETER S. LYNCH • LINDA A. PESCOLIDO • FRANK C. RIPLEY • STACY SCHIFF • MERIWETHER C. SCHMID • ERIC B. SCHULTZ • ALVY RAY SMITH • LYNN TROWBRIDGE • JUSTIN L. WYNER

The NEHG Register (ISSN 0028-4785) is published in winter, spring, summer, and fall by New England Historic Genealogical Society, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116. An electronic version is free with membership. Members who want to receive a print copy in the mail must pay \$20 per year. For subscription and membership information, call 888-296-3447 or visit AmericanAncestors.org/join.

Copyright © 2023 by New England Historic Genealogical Society. All rights reserved. No part of this periodical may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the copyright holder, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review. NEHGS is a nonprofit corporation qualified under Section 501(c)(3) of the Internal Revenue Code. The periodical's name and titles and headings are trademarks of NEHGS and the name and logo of NEHGS are registered in the U.S. Patent and Trademark Office and may not be used without the express permission of the Society's Board of Trustees. All contents of this periodical are archived for member access at AmericanAncestors.org. Periodicals postage is paid at Boston, Massachusetts, and additional mailing offices.

POSTMASTER: Please send address changes to Member Services, NEHGS, 99–101 Newbury Street, Boston, Massachusetts 02116-3007.

Editorial

Genealogists have long worked to discover and map out the pre-colonial kinships of Great Migration immigrants to New England. One such family network is outlined in our lead article, **The Wheeler and the Spokes: The Wells-Tapp-Tuttle Kinship: Discussing the Immigrants Anne¹ (Wells) Wheeler, Edmund¹ Tapp, Elizabeth¹ (Herbert) Corwin, John¹ Herbert, Richard¹ Tuttle, John¹ Tuttle, and William¹ Tuttle**, by Travis Dodge Miscia. The author's discovery of the 1656 will of the Rev. William Wells of Moulsoe, Buckinghamshire, which names his daughter Anne Wheeler "who now liveth in New England," provides circumstantial but overwhelming evidence that she was the wife of Ephraim¹ Wheeler of Concord, Massachusetts, and Fairfield, Connecticut, and was part of a previously unidentified cluster of immigrants to New England.

The immigrant Zacheus¹ Curtis of Massachusetts, who arrived on the *James* from Southampton, England in 1635, has long been thought to have been from Downton, Wiltshire, although no record of him has ever been found there. In **The English Origin of Zacheus¹ Curtis of Salem, Reading, Gloucester, and Rowley, Massachusetts**, author Robert Battle reveals that his baptism has been discovered in the bishop's transcripts records of Durnford, Wiltshire, about eight miles north of Downton.

John Snelling (c1628-1672), a small trader of fish and foodstuffs along the New England coast, is found first in Saco, Maine by 1655 and in Boston two years later. An article in the July 1898 issue of this journal stated that he was the nephew of Dr. William Snelling (1624/5-1678), a native of Plympton St. Mary, Devon, who immigrated to New England in 1647. In **John Snelling of Boston, Massachusetts, and His Purported Uncle, Dr. William Snelling of Boston**, author Marjorie P. Snelling examines the lives of both men, concluding that there is no evidence of ties between them. John Snelling, who was often a defendant in court cases, left an estate of only £16, leaving a widow in need of support from the town of Boston, never seeking help from her husband's purported uncle. Dr. William, on the other hand, was a well-educated member of an established gentry family and was comfortably well off at his death.

Genealogists have long been intrigued by the 1649 will of Elizabeth Morrick of Roxbury, Massachusetts, that mentions three other New England immigrants: William Fellows of Ipswich, Massachusetts, Richard Fellows of Connecticut, and Samuel Fellows of Salisbury, Massachusetts. The will also points to Elizabeth's connection to southern Leicestershire, where the surname of Fellow(s) is plentiful. Working with these clues, author Clifford L. Stott, in **The English Ancestry of Brothers William Fellows of Ipswich, Mass., and Richard Fellows of Hartford, Conn., and Springfield, Northampton, and Hadley, Mass.**, searched local parish and probate records, tracing the family origins back for several generations.

Henry¹ Luce and his wife Remember (Litchfield) settled on Martha's Vineyard in the early 1670s, leaving a family of ten children as chronicled by Charles Edward Banks in his history of the island published in 1911. As was

common at that time, Banks did not indicate the specific sources supporting his statements. In **The Family of Henry and Remember Luce of Martha's Vineyard**, author B. Darrell Jackson systematically analyzes the evidence for each child to document their presence on Martha's Vineyard, determining that Banks's genealogical account of the family is sound.

In the next article, author Clifford L. Stott extends the pedigree of Daniel¹ Lovett of Braintree, Massachusetts for two generations in **The Lovett Family of Chesham, Buckinghamshire, Ancestors of Daniel¹ Lovett And His Half-Sister Elizabeth (Lovett) Twitchell, Wife of Joseph¹ Twitchell, of Massachusetts**. While evidence for the placement of the immigrant in this family is circumstantial, the author makes a reasoned argument for the connection to his half-sister, based on the fact that she and her husband settled in neighboring Dorchester, Massachusetts.

We present the third and final installment of **The English Origins of John Thurber of Swansea in Plymouth Colony and His Descendants**, by Florence Thurber Gargaro, Kathryn Davitt Peters, and Barry R. Smith. This completes the third generation, nearly all of whose members lived in Swansea and Rehoboth, Massachusetts and adjacent parts of Rhode Island.

New England Articles in Genealogical Journals in 2021 indexes articles in fifteen journals by name, place, and some subjects.

We conclude this issue with a multipart article by Rhonda R. McClure. In Part 1 of **The Rotches and the Rodmans: A Tale of New England Quakerism**, the author discusses the spread of Quakerism in New England and its effects on the interrelated Rotch and Rodman families of New Bedford, Massachusetts. Immediately following, Part 2 consists of a genealogy of the families. Parts 3 and 4 will be published in later issues of the *Register*.

– Henry B. Hoff and David Curtis Dearborn

The Wheeler and the Spokes: The Wells-Tapp-Tuttle Kinship Network

Discussing the Immigrants Anne¹ (Wells) Wheeler,
Edmund¹ Tapp, Elizabeth¹ (Herbert) Corwin, John¹ Herbert,
Richard¹ Tuttle, John¹ Tuttle, and William¹ Tuttle

*Travis Dodge Miscia**

I. Overview

The Puritans did not come alone to New England. They came with children, siblings, aged parents, cousins, in-laws, ministers, and neighbors.^[1] Religious non-conformism tended to spread within family groups. But most religious non-conformists—or “godly” folk, as some knew themselves—never left England. These well-recognized facts have enormous genealogical implications. Any given immigrant, no matter how sparse or solitary their recorded life, may be but the surfacing shoot of a tangled and ranging root system in the old sod. In light of that, one often successful, if counterintuitive, “method” of unearthing the English origins of a Great Migration immigrant is to train your focus on the family of someone else.

Here, I was in search of a Buckinghamshire Wells family, and happened upon the last will and testament of Rev. William Wells of Moulsoe, proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury on 15 October 1656.^[2] This cleric was entirely unrelated to my original quarry, but his will is a page-turner. Among many other relatives, associates, and parishioners, he named his daughter Anne Wheeler, “who now liveth in New England.” New England suffered no shortage of Wheeler immigrants, and my suspicions fell immediately on the vast Wheeler network from Cranfield, Bedfordshire, a mere hour’s walk (from church to church) across the Buckinghamshire border from Moulsoe. But had there been a Wheeler–Wells alliance recorded in the Cranfield parish registers, the many diligent Wheeler researchers would have surely found it.^[3]

* The author thanks John Taplin and Craig Partridge for their invaluable thoughts on an earlier draft of this article.

¹ See generally the work of the historian Roger Thompson, particularly *Mobility & Migration: East Anglian Founders of New England, 1629–1640* (Amherst, Mass. University of Massachusetts Press, 1994), as well as Robert Charles Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees: The Deep Roots of the Great Migration to New England* (Boston: NEHGS, 2018).

² Will of Rev. William Wells, Prerogative Court of Canterbury Wills (hereinafter PCC), PROB 11/258/407.

³ As to those many diligent researchers, they have spilled whole barrels of ink, starting with Albert Gallatin Wheeler, Jr.’s appropriately named *The genealogical and encyclopedic history of the Wheeler family in America* (Boston: American College of Genealogy, 1914). I rely here on Raymond David Wheeler’s comprehensive and well-sourced 1994 work *The Wheeler Genealogy*:

There are likewise no Wheeler–Wells marriages in the surviving Moulsoe parish records.^[4]

Though the marriage record may not exist, we can resort to the simple exigency of determining which of the Wheeler immigrants to New England married a woman named Anne of unknown origin. There is one such immigrant: Ephraim Wheeler of Concord and Fairfield, who crossed the Atlantic probably in Spring 1638.^[5] Though the evidence is circumstantial, the identification is very likely: (a) no other Wheeler immigrants are known to have married a woman named Anne of the right age to be ours;^[6] (b) the Wheelers of Cranfield and Wells of Moulsoe lived in neighboring parishes; and, (c) as demonstrated below, another of Rev. William Wells’s children was married to the Baptist preacher William Wheeler, a first cousin to Ephraim Wheeler and brother to four more Wheeler immigrants.

Further exploration of the Wells family—through wills, parish records, and the published work of genealogists—begins to outline an extensive clerical kinship network, of which this article sketches only a part. Some, but not all, of the family were of a non-conformist or godly bent, with connections not only to the many Wheeler and Wheeler-adjacent immigrants—R. D. Wheeler identified nearly thirty of those—but also close ties to the New Haven Colony immigrants Edmund Tapp and William Tuttle, and the Massachusetts Bay Colony immigrants John Tuttle, Richard Tuttle, John Herbert, and Elizabeth (Herbert) Corwin. As discussed below, there are surely further connections yet undiscovered.

This article demonstrates (1) that Anne (Wells) Wheeler was very likely the wife of the immigrant Ephraim Wheeler; (2) that she was in turn quite likely the “Ann Wells” enrolled twice in London at two different ages as a passenger on the *Planter* and on the *Susan and Ellen*; (3) that she was a niece of the immigrant Edmund Tapp, a second cousin of the immigrant Tuttle brothers, and a niece by marriage of the stepmother of the immigrants Elizabeth (Herbert) Corwin and John Herbert; and finally (4) that she was but one node in a network of godly ministers and laypeople. Of yet more genealogical interest, her aunt Frances (Hall) Wells was sister-in-law to

The Ancestral Wheeler Family of Cranfield, Bedfordshire, England, whose descendants settled in Colonial New England (Dolgeville, N.Y.: Kinsystems, 1994). In doing so, I take no position on the ongoing controversy about the correct familial placement of George¹ Wheeler of Concord.

⁴ Moulsoe parish register [FHL film 1,042,391].

⁵ Clarence Almon Torrey *New England Marriages to 1700*, 3 vols. (Boston: NEHGS, 2011); 3:1635 online database. *AmericanAncestors.org*. NEHGS: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008) at 1635. As to the approximate immigration date, it is discussed further in Section III, below.

⁶ *Ibid.* at 3:1635, 1641. Two other Wheeler immigrants were married to women named Ann, but they are both otherwise identified and too old to be children of Rev. William Wells. There was Ann Yeomans, wife of John Wheeler of Newbury, and Ann Halsey, wife of Thomas Wheeler of Stratford and Fairfield [respectively, Walter Goodwin Davis, *Massachusetts and Maine Families in the Ancestry of Walter Goodwin Davis (1885–1966): A Reprinting, in Alphabetical Order by Surname, of the Sixteen Multi-Ancestor Compendia (plus Thomas Haley of Winter Harbor and His Descendants)*. (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1996), 3:604; and R. D. Wheeler, *Wheeler Genealogy* [note 3], 31.

William Shakespeare's daughter Susanna, perhaps the Bard of Avon's closest familial connection to New England.^[7]

II. The Wells Family of the Nene Valley

The ancestral Wells family can be traced to Hugh^C and Agnes^C Well[e]s, living most likely within about 10 miles of the River Nene during the reign of the Tudors. The 1560 will of John Loftes of Lutton, Hunts,^[8] probably a close relation, and the 1589 will of an unmarried Wells son, Raffe, outlines the family as it stood in those years.^[9] John Loftes left an extensive estate in his will dated 16 November 1560 with the following bequests and devises:^[10]

Family: to every child of my son Robert Loftes; to every one of my god children; to Katherine Loftes daughter of William Loftes of Oundle; to the children of John Loftes, son of said William Loftes, my brother William Loftes to hold in trust until the children of John reach the age of eighteen; to my daughter Margaret, wife of Richard Barnwell of Elton, my house in in Oundle now in the tenure of Henry Collopp; to my son Robert Loftes all my lands and tenements in the town and fields of Ashton; to my son Robert all leases held of master William Apryce in the lordship of Washingley; to two of the children of the said Richard Barnwell at the age of 18; to Elizabeth Loftes wife of Robert Loftes; to John Loftes son of the said Robert Loftes my folden table; to brother William Loftes; to Richard Barnwell of Elton my black horse in his keeping; to Robert Loftes my son some household goods, to go to his son John Loftes after his death; to Agnes Loftes, wife of my brother William Loftes of Oundle and to John Loftes his son, half a dozen silver spoons; to Katherine Loftes, daughter of John Loftes of Oundle, other bedroom goods now in the house of William Loftes of Oundle; Elizabeth Loftes, daughter of Robert Loftes household goods now in the house of William Loftes of Oundle; to Katherine Loftes, daughter of Robert Loftes, household goods; John Loftes, son of William Loftes of Oundle.

Servants: every servant of my son Robert Loftys; Margery Comfort, servant to my brother William Loftes; Agnes Higham servant of William Loftes of Oundle one ewe.

Unidentified: Joan Kirkeslayne of Lutton; Richard Higham; Thomas Foote; Anthony Foote; the children of Thomas Goodfellow of Cranford when they reach the age of eighteen; Adlyn Welles, the daughter of Agnes

⁷ Shakespeare's son-in-law, Thomas Quiney, belonged to a family with substantial and long-term investments in Virginia, but none of the family is known to have immigrated.

⁸ Will of John Loftes of Lutton, Huntingdonshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/44/3. My thanks to John Taplin for identifying and transcribing this will in the course of his own research.

⁹ Will of Raffe Wells of Chellington, Archdeaconry Court of Bedford, 1589, folio 93 [FHL film 1,066,795].

¹⁰ He also left monetary bequests to the mother church at Peterborough, the mending of local highways, the poor of eleven local parishes, the church at Lutton, and to every maid who should marry in Lutton within a year of his decease.

Welles of Hemington two pairs of flaxen sheets; to Elizabeth Ashton the daughter of Thomas Ashton of Armeston one pair of flaxen sheets; to the said Adlyn Welles and Elizabeth Ashton ten ewes apiece; to Elizabeth Ashton daughter of Thomas Ashton one milk cow; to John Welles one bullock and one black horse which is in the hands of William Ashton of Ashton; to Richard Bettridge cow in the hands of Richard Barnwell of Elton; to Grace Bettridge the same; John Drycone of Oundell; Edward Barber, Thomas Deche, Richard Boner, and John Loftys, all dwelling in Oundle; to Anne Ashton, wife of Thomas Ashton of Armeston, a brass pan bought of John House of Yaxley, as well as other bedroom items in the use of William Loftes of Oundle; the six children of Thomas Ashton of Armeston, to be delivered at the age of 18.

Debts forgiven: To William Bell, Robert Bayte, and Alice Smyth widow, dwelling in Lutton, all debts forgiven.

Executors: son Robert Loftes and John Loftes of Oundle.

Supervisors: brother William Loftes of Oundle and Thomas Ashton of Armeston.

Finally, we find the following provisions of interest:

Item I gyve to Eight children of Agnes Welles of Hemyngton Twenty shillinges apece to be delyuered unto euerye of them when they come to the age of Eighteene yeers. And yf yt fortune that anye of them fortune to departe before that they shall come to the aforesayde age That I will that the legacye or legacyes of them that be departed shall remayne to the other of the sayde children that shalbe then lyvinge.

Item I gyve to Nycholas Welles, Thomas Welles, Edward Welles, and Raaf Welles the children of Agnys Welles of Hemyngton Twentye Ewes equallye to be deuyded amonge them all at suche tyme as they and euerye of them shall come to the age of Eighteene yeers. And yf anye of them departe before the sayde age the legacyes of them to be deuyded amonge the other then lyvinge Item I will that Thomas Aysstton of Armestone shall haue the custodye of the sayde monnye and shepe that I haue gyven unto the children of the sayde Annys Welles unto suche tyme as they shall come unto the age as aforesayde . . .

Item wher as I the sayd testator haue gyven yn thys my will to fflower of the children of Agnes Welles, That ys to saye Nycholas, Thomas, Edwarde and Raafe Welles certayne legacyes as ys aboue expressed and declared. And wheras I the sayde testator doo stande bounde by my dede obligatorye to Thomas Roo of Hemyngton that the sayde fflower children shall not demande nor take for their legacyes to them gyven by their father Hughe Welles deceased but onlye Syxe poundes Thyrteene shillinges and fflower pence apece And yf the sayde Children requyer or demande anye more of their osayde ffathers good Then I the sayd

testator will that the sayde fflowar Children shall not have none of the legacys that I haue gyven unto them yn thys my Last will anye thinge before Rehersed to the contrarye not withstanding.

Given his solicitude for the entire Well[e]s clan, it would be unsurprising to find John Loftes was, to state but one possibility, Hugh Well[e]s's brother-in-law.

Nineteen years later, the family composition had subtly changed. Though in his will Raffe Wells remembered the poor at Folksworth, Huntingdonshire, and requested burial in the churchyard there, he was living in relatively distant Chellington, Bedfordshire, where his brother Thomas Wells was the parson. Raffe named his brothers Robert, John, Edward, and Mr. Thomas (the honorific indicating he was a clergyman), and two sisters, an unnamed wife of a man named Ashton and Adlin [Osborne]. Crucially, he also remembered a distinctively named kinsman, Eusabis Barwick, who he nominated to oversee his estate.

Thirty years later and about 14 miles away, John Wells of Ringstead, Northamptonshire, made his will, and Eusabis Barwick—or rather his son of the same name—reappears, a grandson of the testator.^[11] As transcribed by David L. Greene in *The American Genealogist*, the will elucidates the relationship between and among John Wells and his Tuttle grandchildren, three of whom founded families in New England. Read in concert with the Ringstead parish registers and the wills of John Loftes and Raffe Wells, it connects the Tuttle to their granduncle Raffe, great-grandparents Hugh and Agnes, and a broader cousinship, some of whom also left England for the New World.

The minister Thomas Wells, brother to Raffe and John, was instituted to the rectorship of Chellington by the winter of 1572–73, and to the rectorship of neighboring Carlton a few years later.^[12] He was allotted the proverbial three score and ten for his ministerial duties alone.^[13] He served both parishes himself until about 1614, when his son William^A took over the parochial tasks at Carlton.^[14] Those seventy years were not entirely without incident. He was at one point summoned to court for leaving his horse in the chancel of the Carlton church during his sermon.^[15] In the twilight of his years, he was summoned again before the court for non-payment of a royal levy. Wells, probably in his nineties, did not show up. The commissary of the court called

¹¹ David L. Greene, "Origin of John Tuttle of Ipswich, Massachusetts," *The American Genealogist*, 54 (1978):167–175.

¹² Charles Wilmer Foster, *Lincoln Episcopal Records in the Time of Thomas Cooper . . . bishop of Lincoln, A. D. 1571 to A. D. 1584* (Lincoln, England: W. K. Morton, 1912 [Publications of the Lincoln Record Society; v. 2]), 58, 60.

¹³ F. G. Emmison, ed., *Bedfordshire Parish Registers* (Bedford: County Record Office, 1931–), 34:B-i ("In the church, there is a flat stone with the following inscription: 'Here lies Mr. Tho Wells who lived Parson of Carlton and Chellington about threescore and ten years and died August 5th 1642 aged about a Hundred.'").

¹⁴ Clergy of the Church of England Database (online database), Record #5444.

¹⁵ John Brown, *John Bunyan: His Life, Times, and Work* (London: Wm. Isbister Limited: 1885), 7–8.

him an “old owle,” suspended him, and would not dismiss him until he paid the £6 due.^[16]

Even with some ninety years of runway, Thomas’s rise in the world was surprisingly rapid. Though we don’t know his father’s socioeconomic status, his brother Robert was a husbandman at his death, and his brother John was a small yeoman.^[17] But Thomas afforded two of his sons an Oxford education.^[18] As early as 1590, he was taxed for the full armor of a horseman with a matchlock pistol, or “petronel.”^[19] In 1623, he was one of four men listed in the subsidy roll for Chellington, and the only cleric so taxed in all of Willey Hundred.^[20] Thomas even managed to purchase the advowson of Thurning, Northamptonshire, in 1617.^[21]

Thomas arranged for his son William’s marriage to Agnes Tapp, most likely in late 1616 or early 1617.^[22] Shortly thereafter, the bride’s father, Edmund Tapp of Sherrington, Buckinghamshire, became concerned Thomas Wells and his son Michael were conspiring to deny Agnes her rightful portion of the settlement and brought suit in chancery against the parson.^[23] In his 1997 treatment in *The American Genealogist*, Craig Partridge identified records for three men named Edmund Tapp: (1) of Sherrington, (2) of Felmersham, Bedfordshire, and (3) of Bennington, Hertfordshire.^[24] The Bennington man’s son, also named Edmund, immigrated to the New Haven Colony. Partridge proposed that the Felmersham and Bennington men were one and the same, and that the Sherrington man (he of the Wells marriage settlement) was possibly identical as well.^[25] The 1656 will of William Wells and associated evidence gives that theory a strong push into the realm of near certainty.

Partridge demonstrated that the immigrant Edmund¹ Tapp had a brother Robert Tapp, yeoman of Sharnbrook, Bedfordshire.^[26] The will of Rev. William^A

¹⁶ *Ibid.*, 12–31. His purported refusal to pay is redolent of non-conformity—the funds were intended for subduing Scots Covenanters—but as the only whiff in a long life, the scent is likely false. Perhaps he was indeed just an “old owle,” and a pluralist old owl at that.

¹⁷ Commissary Court of Lincoln for the Archdeaconry of Huntingdon, 1590, vol. 15, folio 159 [FHL film 187,863]; Greene, *John Tuttle* [note 11], 54:169.

¹⁸ Joseph Foster, ed., *Alumni Oxonienses: the Members of the University of Oxford, 1500–1714*, early ser., 4 vols. (Oxford and London: 1891–1892), 4:1596–97.

¹⁹ Charles Wilmer Foster, ed., *The State of the Church in the Reigns of Elizabeth I and James I as Illustrated by Documents Relating to the Diocese of Lincoln* (Lincoln: The Lincoln Record Society, 1926), 163.

²⁰ Subsidy Roll of Bedfordshire, transcribed by Charles Banks [FHL DGS 7957907].

²¹ William Page, Granville Proby, and S. Inskipp Ladds, eds., *The Victoria History of the County of Huntingdon* (London: St. Catherine Press, 1926–1936), 3:112.

²² *Tappe v. Wells*, Chancery pleadings, 1618, C 3/326/34, The National Archives. Their eldest child was baptized at Chellington, 29 November 1618. Chellington parish register [FHL film 952,423].

²³ *Tappe v. Wells*. To the point of Wells’ wealth, Tapp asserted that he was “a man of great estate and value,” though the plaintiff perhaps had an interest in that being true.

²⁴ Craig Partridge, PhD, “The English Origins of Edmund Tapp of New Haven and Milford, Connecticut,” *The American Genealogist*, 72 (1997):65–80.

²⁵ *Ibid.* at 74. Partridge notes the will of Margaret^A (_____) Tapp, widow of Chellington, Archdeaconry of Bedford, 1639/136, which is rather spare, naming only one child, Agnes Welles, and her husband William, as well as her Welles grandchildren, viz: Mary, Anne, Margaret, Susan, Thomas, Alice, Elizabeth, and Judith.

²⁶ *Ibid.* at 66. His name and domicile are from Partridge’s central document, the pleadings from the chancery suit *Barber v. Tapp*.

Wells shows that the testator's father-in-law—the Sherrington man—had a son Robert as well, and that furthermore this Robert Tapp was alive and married in 1656, just as the “other” Robert Tapp was.^[27] Finally, Robert Tapp of Sharnbrook had a son, also named Edmund.^[28] This younger Edmund died a young man, and he named in his will an “Aunt Alice Laurence.”^[29] She is surely the Alice Tappe who married Valentine Lawrence at Flamstead, Hertfordshire, on 29 October 1622.^[30] Rev. William Wells had a long business association with Lawrence regarding land in Luton—a market center with which Lawrence, but not Wells, was otherwise connected—and an in-law relationship makes good sense of the dealings between these two men.^[31]

Wells spent several years assisting his father as stipendiary curate at Carlton,^[32] and possibly a few years after that as a gentleman farmer.^[33] He was most likely the man Parliament appointed in 1644 to take over the vicarage of Melbourn, Cambridgeshire, after the incumbent was sequestered, presumably for Royalist sympathies.^[34] He finished his career holding the benefice of

²⁷ Will of William Wells, PCC [note 2].

²⁸ Partridge, “Origins of Edmund Tapp,” *The American Genealogist* 72 (1997):65–80 [note 24].

²⁹ Will of Edmund Tapp of London, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/263/57.

³⁰ Flamstead parish register, indexed at Ancestry.com. *England & Wales Marriages, 1538–1988* [database online]. Ancestry.com [FHL film 1,040,653].

³¹ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online], DW 113, 8 March 1627/28 (“Letter of attorney William Welles, Chellington, clerk appoints Valentine Lawrence, Crawley Green for taking possession of - - cottage, yard and close adjoining in south end of Luton, late occupied by Robert Leaper. conveyed to (i) by Abraham Crawley, Luton, maltster Witness: William Geynes.”); *Ibid.*, BH1, 28 Mar. 1655 (“Conveyance (Feoffment); for £120: Wm. Wells of Moulsoe (co. Bucks.), clerk, & Valentine Lawrence of Wheathamstead, gent., to Edm. Jones of Luton, gent., & w. Margt. - - A messuage & malting house in the South End of Luton (formerly several cottages, & purchd. by Val. L. (father of sd. V. L.), part from Rich. Conesby, & part from Robt. Collyns), together with the pump, cistern, lofts etc., situate next to the street leading from the market place of Luton to a place called the Brach on one side, & Blackwater Lane & a tenement in occ. of John Carpenter on other side, with one end of the messuage next to the orchard in occ. of sd. J. C., & the barn & part of the malting house next to a small tenement & ‘slipe’ (purchd. by sd. Wm. Wells from Thos. Collyer & w. Mary). Witn: Jas. Greene, Robt. Greene, Richd. Parchmer, John Boulstred, John Everitt, & Rich. Jones.”).

³² Chellington parish register [FHL film 952,423]. The Puritan clergyman, educator, and proto-philanthropist Nicholas Latham, parson of Barnwell St. Andrew, founded four schools during his lifetime and endowed a fifth. In his 1620 will [PCC [see note 2], 94 Soame, PROB 11/136/385, abstracted and discussed by Scott Swanson in Scott W. Swanson, “Notes on the Family and Ancestry of Lewis Latham, Father of Frances (Latham) (Dungan) (Clarke) Vaughn,” *Register*, 171 (2017):20, he leaves small legacies to the teachers at his schools, among them a William Wells, the master at Hemington. Given his continuing responsibilities at Chellington, this man is unlikely our Rev. William⁴ Wells, but it bears notice. The other teachers were John Parker at Oundle, Thomas Taylor, Jr. at Barnwell, and William Hull at Warkton. This is perhaps a clue to the identity of Anne (Taylor) (Tuttle) Holyoke, who Wells cousin Richard Tuttle married at Barnwell St. Andrews. An Anne, daughter to Thomas Taylor, was baptized there 28 October 1593, presumably by Rev. Nicholas Latham.

³³ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online], GA 1276, 19 January. 1638/39. The document is a marriage settlement for Dickens alias Dickenson and Younge families referring to a “close in Felmersham, occupied by William Wells of Chellington, gentleman, adjoining Chellington berry field . . .”

³⁴ John Venn and J. A. Venn, comps., *Alumni Cantabrigiensis: a biographical list of all known students, graduates and holders of office at the University of Cambridge, from the earliest times to 1900*, 2 pts. in 10 vols. (Cambridge: 1922–54) 1:2:77; A. P. Baggs, S. M. Keeling and C. A. F. Meekings. “Parishes: Melbourn,” in *A History of the County of Cambridge and the Isle of Ely: Volume 8*,

Moulsoe after the previous rector was also sequestered.^[35] Among the six daughters named in his will are Anne Wheeler, “who liveth in New England,” and Mary Wheeler, whose husband William he appointed to oversee the estate with Robert Tapp.

Taking daughter Mary first, we can only speculate that she settled in neighboring Cranfield, the wife Mary named in the will of the Baptist minister William Wheeler, son of John and Elizabeth (_____) Wheeler and brother to the immigrants Obadiah¹ Wheeler of Concord.^[36] The onomastic evidence is powerful. Of the names of William and Mary Wheeler’s seven known children, five could have been honoring the nuclear family of Rev. William^A Wells, but not that of the Wheelers.^[37] The other two children share names with William Wheeler’s mother and youngest brother.

As to Anne¹, and as noted at the outset, it is simply a question of finding a mysterious Anne (_____) among the many Wheelers recorded in New England, preferably one still living in 1656. One person, the wife of Ephraim¹ Wheeler, fits the bill.^[38]

III. Anne¹ (Wells) Wheeler

Ephraim Wheeler was a young man of 16 in April 1637, and evidently a very responsible one, when his sister Abiah gave him land and directed him to make a payment to another legatee, Agnes Underwood.^[39] Ten months later, in February 1637/38, he and brothers Timothy¹ and Joseph¹ sold land, perhaps in preparation for their leavetaking.^[40] Little more than a year after that, he was made a freeman in Massachusetts.^[41] According to Robert Charles Anderson, those made freemen in early spring had typically sailed, at the latest, in the

ed. A. P. M. Wright (London: Victoria County History, 1982), 67–82. British History Online, accessed June 18, 2020, <http://www.british-history.ac.uk/vch/cambs/vol8/pp67-82> (citing the Ely Diocesan Records at the Cambridge University Library, which the author has not reviewed). In support of this being the same William Wells, he was certainly later intruded at Moulsoe, and his daughter Margaret was married to Joseph Anger/Auger at Melbourn in 1650. (See Notes #180 and 185, below).

³⁵ Oliver Ratcliff, comp., *History and Antiquities of the Newport Pagnell Hundreds* (Olney, Bucks: Cowper Press, 1900), 320.

³⁶ Wheeler, *Wheeler Genealogy* [note 3], 36–37.

³⁷ *Ibid.*, 37. The children, per the will of William Wheeler, were Mary, Elizabeth, Sarah, Susanna, Joshua, Ann, and Judith.

³⁸ It is worth dispensing parenthetically with a very old error appearing several times in print. The wife of the immigrant Ephraim Wheeler was not a Turney. The error, first printed in Elizabeth Hubbell Schenck, *The History of Fairfield, Fairfield County, Connecticut, from the settlement of the town in 1639 to 1818*, 2 vols., (New York: the author, 1889–1905), 1:422, was born of the will of Robert Turney, who names a son-in-law Ephraim Wheeler. But, as correctly printed as early as 1930, Ephraim was the immigrant’s namesake son. [Donald Lines Jacobus, comp. and ed., *History and Genealogies of the Families of Old Fairfield*, 1930), 2 vols. in 3) 1:665–66.] As is common for the genealogical species, this supercentenarian mistake liveth still.

³⁹ Wheeler, *Wheeler Genealogy* [note 3], 32–33.

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*

⁴¹ Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed., *Records of the Governor & Company of the Massachusetts bay in New England*, 5 vols., (Boston: William White, 1853–1854), 1:375.

previous year.^[42] Ephraim, fenced between his last recorded act in Cranfield and his admission as a freeman, probably came over in March or April of 1638, a tender 19, very unlikely to be married in a society where the average age for a man's first marriage was 26.^[43] Anne¹ Wells, our proposed partner, would have been even younger, approximately 17. Despite their origins in neighboring parishes, they were quite probably married in Massachusetts.

Two young women named Ann(e) Wells appear in the lists of people bound for New England in April 1635, one 15 years old on the *Planter*, and one 20 years old on the *Susan and Ellen* a week later.^[44] Anderson, in Vol. VII of *The Great Migration* series, treats them as two separate immigrants.^[45] In separate sketches for two immigrants named Margaret Leach, Anderson notes that “there are a number of examples in which the same person would seem to be have been recorded on different vessels at London in 1635,” before concluding that the age gap between the two Margaret Leaches (15 and 22) suggests two different people.^[46] Reasonably, the same logic applies to the two Anne Wells. But there is more to the story, and Margaret Leach is a part of it.

A small contingent of six young people were enrolled *twice* in London in April 1635, largely grouped together for the *Planter* list, then spread out (but still together on the same list) for the *Susan and Ellen*. They were: Ann Wells (age 15, 20), Margaret Leach (15, 22), Marie Smith (18, 21), Elizabeth Swayne (20, 16), Hanna Smith (18, 30), and Philip Atwood (12, 13).^[47] Of these, only Atwood resurfaces in New England, albeit not for eighteen years.^[48] The parsimonious solution is that this is one set of six people with irregular ages who switched vessels, rather than two sets of people with the same names who happened to arrive at the London docks to sail for New England within a week of each other. At least as to the *Planter*, they—and specifically Anne Wells—are on a very short list labeled “more for the *Planter*,” nearly half of which is claimed by the households of Richard and William Tuttle, Anne (Wells) Wheeler's second cousins.

I would propose then, that not only were Anne Wells and Ephraim Wheeler married in New England, but Anne Wells and a group of other young people, likely part of a larger household and perhaps following a favored Puritan cleric

⁴² *Great Migration Newsletter* (Online Database: AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2018), 10:12.

⁴³ David Hackett Fischer, *Albion's Seed: Four British Folkways in North America* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1989), 75–76.

⁴⁴ John Camden Hotten, ed., *The Original Lists of Persons of Quality . . .* (New York: J. W. Bouton, 1874), 49, 59.

⁴⁵ Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration, Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635* (Boston: NEHGS, 2005), Vol. VII T–Y, 292–293.

⁴⁶ Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration, Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635* (Boston: NEHGS, 2005), Vol. IV I–L, 268–269. Though Anderson places the younger Margaret Leach on the *Defence*, she was actually listed on the *Planter*.

⁴⁷ Hotten, *Original Lists* [note 44], 49, 59.

⁴⁸ Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Begins, Immigrants to New England 1620–1633*, 3 vols., Boston: NEHGS, 1995), 1:104–106.

(such as their shipmate Peter Bulkeley), immigrated together aboard the *Susan and Ellen* after first enrolling for passage on the *Planter*.^[49]

IV. The Kinship Network

A. Michael Wells and William Shakespeare

There is an extensive genealogical literature regarding the family and milieu of William Shakespeare, who is after all the most famous Briton of the Elizabethan and early Stuart eras (Elizabeth and James I not excepted).^[50] His connection to the Wells family of Carlton and Chellington was first recognized by Irvine Gray as early as 1937: Michael, the eldest brother of Reverend William^A Wells, was married to Frances Hall, whose brother John married Shakespeare's daughter Susanna.^[51] The Halls were parishioners of Rev. Thomas^B Wells in Carlton.^[52] Recently, the spotlight on the Bard widened to include even William's younger brother Reverend John Wells of Thurning—and in particular the Dillingham relations of his first wife.^[53]

B. Rev. John Wells and the Dillinghams

Rev. John Wells's first wife was Susanna Dillingham, and they were married at Thorpe Achurch, Northamptonshire, a parish in the midst of schism.^[54] Neither bride nor groom had obvious connections to the parish before the marriage, but the parson there was a very prominent ex-Separatist whose name had become a byword for congregationalist church government: Rev. Robert Browne.^[55] But Browne did not perform the marriage; he was apparently barred from *any* parochial services at the time, perhaps at the instigation of a dissident group of parishioners led by future Bostonian Thomas Oliver.^[56]

⁴⁹ Further research in the borderlands of Bedfordshire and Northamptonshire could be fruitful for the other immigrants. Margaret Leach in particular may have been a relation of Alice (Tapp) Wells: William Leach of Middle Temple (originally of Felmersham) called himself kinsman to her brother, Edmund Tapp (Partridge, "Edmund Tapp," *The American Genealogist* 72:65–80 [note 24]). And there was certainly a brother of William Leach in New England in the 1640s, the subject of a forthcoming article by this author.

⁵⁰ See, e.g., Paul Edmonson and Stanley Wells, eds., *The Shakespeare Circle: An Alternative Biography* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2015).

⁵¹ Irvine Gray, "Shakespeare's Son In-Law," *The Genealogists' Magazine* 7 (Sept. 1936):344.

⁵² *Ibid.* The vicar of Shakespeare's home village of Stratford-upon-Avon, meanwhile, was Thomas Wilson, brother of the Puritan clergyman and New England immigrant John Wilson (Randy West, "Additions and Corrections: Wilson," *Register* 176 (2022):432).

⁵³ John Taplin, "The Welles family and Their Connections to the Hall and Dillingham Families" (Shakespeare Birthplace Trust: 2019), OS 93.2 Hall/TAP.

⁵⁴ Thorpe Achurch parish registers at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*: Ancestry.com, 2014 ("Nov. 23. 1624 John Wells of Carlton in y^e countye of Bedf. Clarke. & Susanna Dillingham of Cranford in y^e countye of North: . . . Testified by y^e Min. John Barker").

⁵⁵ Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 1], 196–214; see generally Champlin Burrage, *The True Story of Robert Browne (1550?–1663): Father of Congregationalism* (Oxford: Printed by H. Hart at the University Press, 1906).

⁵⁶ Anderson, *Puritan Pedigrees* [note 1], 205–214. Anderson's argument is to some extent speculative, based on oddities in the parish register.

Instead, the curate John Barker married Wells and Dillingham. Whatever cause or belief Barker and the schismatics espoused, John Wells and Susanna Dillingham seem to have sympathized.

Their choice is especially interesting in light of their two families, neither of which suffered any shortage of ordained clergymen. Susanna (Dillingham) Wells was the daughter of Rev. William Dillingham, rector of Cranford; the sister of Rev. Thomas Dillingham, rector of Barnwell All Saints (and later Barnwell St. Andrew as well); and the sister of Rev. William Dillingham, soon to be rector of Barton Seagrave.^[57] Among her nephews were another Rev. William Dillingham, Latinist and later Master of Emmanuel College, Cambridge,^[58] and Rev. Benjamin Dillingham, rector of Oundle.^[59] Among the spouses of her nieces were Rev. Jonathan Cateline, vicar of Horbling, Lincolnshire;^[60] Edward Cawthorne, rector of Tansor,^[61] Northamptonshire; and Rev. John Richardson, rector of Stamford St. Michael's, Lincolnshire.^[62] The last two were ejected as Presbyterians courtesy of the Act of Uniformity.^[63] All of them, and many more family members besides, were named in Rev. John Wells's 1664 will.^[64]

Rev. John Wells married again to the widow Susanna Herbert.^[65] This time the parish was Hemington in Northamptonshire, likely the ancestral Wells home. The officiant was perhaps Rev. Henry Gale, a man who shortly thereafter named both John and Susanna in his will.^[66] She was certainly the widow of John Herbert, shoemaker and alderman of Northampton. Herbert's second wife was named Susanna,^[67] and legacies in Rev. John Wells' will go to her children with Herbert, identified as Wells's sons and daughters "in law," a

⁵⁷ Taplin [note 53], 3; Will of William Dillingham, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/200/29.

⁵⁸ Taplin [note 53], 7–8. For more on this Dillingham, see Estelle Haan, "Sporting with the Classics: The Latin Poetry of William Dillingham." *Transactions of the American Philosophical Society* 100, no. 1 (2010):1–123. Among his many accomplishments, William Dillingham was the literary executor and publisher of the posthumous works of Nathaniel Culverwell, one of the leading Cambridge Platonists, a product of a family foremost in godly circles for many decades.

⁵⁹ Taplin [note 53], 7–8.

⁶⁰ Venn, *Alumni Cantabrig.* [note 34], 1:1:308.

⁶¹ *Ibid.*, 1:1:312.

⁶² *Ibid.*, 1:3:452.

⁶³ Edmund Calamy (original) and Samuel Palmer (revised), *The Nonconformist's Memorial: Being an Account of the Ministers . . .* (London: 1775), 2:157–60, 233.

⁶⁴ Will of John Wells, Clerk of Thurning, Huntingdonshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/315/247.

⁶⁵ Hemington parish registers, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*: Ancestry.com, 2014 ("John Wells Clarke, & Susanna Herbert were marryed the six and twenty day of April").

⁶⁶ Will of Henry Gale, Clerk of Hemington, Northamptonshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/262/310. The Wells–Herbert wedding is the first recorded after a long Civil War-related lacuna. As such, it is difficult to determine who exactly performed the marriage. Longden suggests the previous vicar of Hemington, Daniel Negus, was likely intruded to Great Addington in 1646, and indeed no Negus children are baptized at Hemington after 1640. Gale's will, on the other hand, shows him to be a likely son-in-law of Rev. John Merrill of Kimbolton, making his wife in turn a niece of Susanna (Selby) (Wells) Herbert. In light of the couple's many clerical kin, it would be odd to turn to Hemington without a specific connection.

⁶⁷ Craig Partridge, PhD, "Elizabeth Herbert, Wife of (1) John White and (2) George Corwin," *Register* 150 (1996):190–191.

contemporary usage for stepchildren.^[68] That Susanna was a Selby, and in turn at least the daughter of William Selby of Oundle, and possibly as well his wife Thomasine (Dillingham) Selby, is less certain, but the circumstantial evidence is compelling:

1. A “John Harbart” and Susanna Selby were married at Wilden, Bedfordshire, on 6 May 1620, a parish with no other Herberts and a single Selby, also a marriage.^[69]
2. The rector of the parish, and presumably the man who performed the marriage was Francis Dillingham, of the Dean, Bedfordshire, branch of the Dillingham family.^[70]
3. Francis’s sister Thomasine was married to William Selbie at Dean, 24 July 1598.^[71]
4. Martha Selby was married to John Merrill, vicar of Pytchley, at Oundle, 18 January 1629/30.^[72]
5. The 1647 will of Thomasine and Francis’s brother, Rev. Thomas Dillingham of Over Dean, names his “sister Selby” and “Mr. John Merrill.”^[73]
6. The 1657 will of Rev. John Merrill, then vicar of Kimbolton, Huntingdonshire, leaves a bequest to his sister “Mrs. Wells” and names his “brother Wells” as overseer.^[74]
7. The 1656 will of Rev. Henry Gale, probably vicar of Hemington, leaves bequests to “Father Merrill of Kimbolton, and “Mr.” and “Mrs. Wells” of Thurning. John and Susanna Wells were witnesses to the will along with Nicholas Franklin, called a “brother” in the will of Rev. John Merrill.^[75]

⁶⁸ Will of John Wells, PCC [note 64]. It names, among others, Daniel Herbert, linen draper of Northampton (and his wife Elizabeth), Jeremy Herbert, and Susan Herbert.

⁶⁹ Ancestry.com. *England & Wales Marriages, 1538–1988* [database online; Ancestry.com 2008. (citing Wilden parish register [FHL film 450,473])].

⁷⁰ Stephen Wright, “Dillingham, Francis,” *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* (online ed.). Oxford University Press.

⁷¹ “England Births and Christenings, 1538–1975,” database, FamilySearch (<https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:JM2D-KRM : 22 March 2020>), [FHL film 826,482]; Thomasin Dillingham, 1573; “England Marriages, 1538–1973,” database, FamilySearch (<https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:N2SV-6J7 : 13 March 2020>), [FHL film 826,482], Tomasine Dillingham in entry for Willia. Selbie, 1598.

⁷² Oundle parish registers, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*: Ancestry.com, 2014 (“Mr. John Merrill, vicar of Pitchley [and] Martha Selbie of this parish -- 18 of Januarie.”).

⁷³ Will of Thomas Dillingham, Clerk of Over Dean, Bedfordshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/203/165.

⁷⁴ Will of John Merrill, Clerk of Kimbolton, Huntingdonshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/275/336. In the years before the Civil War, Merrill was chaplain to Edward Montagu, viscount Mandeville and future Earl of Manchester. [Alan McFarlane, ed., *The Diary of Ralph Josselin: 1616–1683* (Oxford, 1991), 7.] He was a prominent Parliamentarian and scion of the Montagus of Boughton, patrons of many of the moderately puritan clerics discussed herein.

⁷⁵ Will of Henry Gale, Clerk of Hemington, Northamptonshire, PCC [see note 66], PROB 11/262/310.

Rev. John Wells's second round of relations included his wife's uncles (or step-uncles),^[76] Rev. Francis Dillingham of Wilden and Rev. Thomas Dillingham of Over Dean; her brother-in-law, Rev. John Merrill of Kimbolton; her stepchildren, the New England immigrants Elizabeth¹ (Herbert) Curwen and John¹ Herbert; and potentially her first cousin, Doctor Theophilus Dillingham, master of Clare Hall, Cambridge. Susanna moved in the godly circles of Northampton before her second marriage and so was surely at least moderately Puritan in sympathies.^[77]

C. Possibilities: Browne, Faldo, St. John

Returning to Anne Wells and her fellow travelers, we note a distinctive Bedfordshire name in the "More for *The Planter*" group, though he does not reappear for the *Susan and Ellen*, namely, "Barth: Faldo."^[78] There is no record of this man in New England, and precious little before that.^[79] But it seems likely he is the man listed as a servant in the will of John Meade, gentleman of Finchingfield, Essex, in 1629.^[80] Meade was a godly man deeply intertwined in the patchwork of leading puritan laymen;^[81] his daughter Elizabeth married the Long Parliamentarian Samuel Browne, the right-hand man of Oliver St. John.^[82] John Meade's servant was surely the Bartholomew Faldo of Sutton, Bedfordshire, whose will was proved at the Archdeaconry Court of Bedford on 29 March 1641.^[83] That man, apparently childless and unmarried, left legacies to Samuel Browne (as "Mr. Brown of Alsey[Arseley] Councillor"), "Mr. Boles" (the longtime rector of Sutton Oliver Bowles, a strident Puritan), and his son, Edward Bo[w]les, another prominent non-conformist.^[84]

Here is as good a place as any to document a dead end in the Wells research that nonetheless sheds light on two of the most important godly families of the era. Samuel Browne was the eldest son and heir of Rev. Nicholas Browne, the rector of Polebrook, Northamptonshire.^[85] Up to and including the latest

⁷⁶ My thanks to John Taplin for pointing out the possibility that Susanna may have been daughter to William Selby by a wife preceding Thomasine Dillingham. In favor of the point, note that (1) Thomasine evidently had three Selby children living in 1608, as per the will of her brother John Dillingham of Over Dean [Will of John Dillingham, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/111/496]; (2) there is a ten-year gap between the Herbert/Selby (1620) and Merrill/Selby (1630) marriages; and (3) the will of Rev. Francis Dillingham of Over Dean names four Selbys (though the relationship to him is not specified), and none of them is Susanna. That said, the timeline is not impossible, especially given the many uncertainties, e.g., Francis may have passed over his niece Susanna because she was already married to a successful shoemaker, and some of the Selbys he listed may have been something to him other than his sister's children.

⁷⁷ John Fielding, ed., *The Diary of Robert Woodford (1637-1641)* (Cambridge: 2012), 83, 182-183.

⁷⁸ Hotten, *Original Lists* [note 44], 49.

⁷⁹ Anderson observes that "no record of this passenger has been found in New England." Robert Charles Anderson, George F. Sanborn, Jr., and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, Vol. II, C-F* (Boston: NEHGS, 2001), 493.

⁸⁰ Will of John Meade of Finchingfield, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/155/613.

⁸¹ E. Vaughan, *Stephen Marshall: A Forgotten Essex Puritan* (London: 1907), 23.

⁸² James S. Hart, Jr., "Browne, Sir Samuel," *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* (online ed.). Oxford University Press.

⁸³ Will of Bartholomew Faldo of Sutton, Archdeaconry Court of Bedford, ABP/W1640-1/163.

⁸⁴ Venn, *Alumni Cantabrig.* [note 34], 1:1:192.

⁸⁵ *Ibid.*

edition, the *Oxford Dictionary of National Biography* calls Samuel a grandson of “Thomas St. John” of Toddingham.^[86] That is false, as many have suspected.^[87] Samuel’s mother was Frances (St. John) (Browne) Weale, the daughter named as “Frances Weles” in the 1618 will of her mother Jane (Neale) St. John, and as “Frances Weales” in the 1626 will of her brother Oliver St. John.^[88] The proof is in the probate: first, that of Nicholas Browne himself, proved PCC 1608, which, *inter alia*, names his widow Frances, sons Samuel and John, and good friend “Thomas Weale the elder of Polebrook,” executor.^[89] The 1625 will of Thomas Weale of Hitchin, Hertfordshire, names his sons-in-law Samuel and John Browne as executors, names his widow Frances as principal legatee, makes bequests to Oliver St. John of Lincoln’s Inn and his sister Elizabeth St. John, and names Oliver St. John of Lincoln’s Inn one of the arbiters of any disputes arising under the will.^[90] Thus, Samuel Browne and his friend and associate Oliver St. John were first cousins, grandchildren of Henry and Jane (Neal) St. John of Keysoe.

Genealogical Summary

1. **HUGH^C WELL[E]S**, was born [say 1518], based on the approximate ages of his children. He was quite likely the Hugh Welles who witnessed the 29 February 1553 will of Raffé Slowgrave of Hemington, indicating the family made its home there.^[91] He married, [say 1541], **AGNES _____**. She was still in Hemington when John Loftes named her in his 26 November 1560 will.

⁸⁶ *Ibid.*, Nicholas Browne, who was then likely the vicar at Lilford, married Frances St. John there on 21 April 1597.

⁸⁷ Indeed, Fleur Adcock came close to making the case in print, albeit not exactly in one of the better-known scholarly venues; she discussed the will of her ancestor Frances (St. John) (Brown) Weale in her poem “Frances.” *Poems 1960–2000* (Hexham: 2000), 248. See also Adrian Burke’s posts on the newsgroup soc.gen.medieval going as far back as 2003, when he first transcribed the will of Nicholas Browne of Polebrook. F. A. Page-Turner also discusses the problem, productively but inconclusively, in *The Publications of the Bedfordshire Historical Record Society* (Aspley Guise, England: 1914), 2:137–141.

⁸⁸ Donald Lines Jacobus, *The Bulkeley Genealogy: Rev. Peter Bulkeley. . .* (New Haven, Conn.: 1933), 30–32. Jacobus observed that Oliver St. John, gentleman of Keysoe (c1575–1626), who married Sarah Bulkeley, had two married sisters named Frances and Jane “Weales” or “Weles,” but did not trace them further. Considering the association of the Carlton and Chellington Wells family with the St. Johns, that caught this author’s eye. Alas, the name was certainly Weale(s). The St. John sisters likely married two brothers from Polebrook. Though out of scope for this article, Rev. Henry Gale of Hemington (see note 66, above), son-in-law of Rev. John Merrill of Kimbolton and nephew by marriage to Rev. John Wells of Thurning, was almost certainly a grandson of Judith (St. John) Gray, sister of Judith (St. John) (Browne) (Weales). Jane (Neale) St. John meanwhile remembered her godson Thomas Dillingham of Deane in her will, pulling the cinch a little tighter around this dense weave of godly connections within and under the influence of the St. Johns and the Montagus of Boughton.

⁸⁹ Will of Nicholas Browne of Polebrook, Northamptonshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/112/29.

⁹⁰ Will of Thomas Weale of Hitchin, Hertfordshire, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/145/519. The qualifier “of Lincolns Inn” marks this as the lawyer and parliamentarian Oliver St. John (c.1598–1673) and not one of the other men of that name living in 1625. His sister Elizabeth St. John, also named in the will and soon-to-be wife of Rev. Samuel Whiting, immigrated to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1638. (Jacobus, *Peter Bulkeley* [note 88].)

⁹¹ Will of Radulph Slowgrave, Husbandman of Hemington, Northamptonshire, Archdeaconry Court of Northampton, 1553, 1st series, Book O, p. 48 [FHL film 187,583].

Children, order of birth an approximation:

- i. ADLIN WELLS, b. [say 1542]; bur. at Fotheringhay, Northamptonshire, 20 Feb. 1572/73; m. RICHARD OSBORNE.^[92] He likely married a second time, as children of Richard Osborne were recorded at Fotheringhay after Adlin's death. At least two of Adlin's children survived her, as they were referenced but not named in the will of her brother Raffé. Children, all recorded at Fotheringhay, and probably incomplete:
 1. *Thomas Osborne*, bp. 2 Nov. 1565; bur. 12 Sept. 1566.
 2. *John Osborne*, bp. 12 Oct. 1567.
 3. *Philip Osborne*, bur. 10 Oct. 1570.
- ii. JOHN WELLS, b. [say 1543]; m. HELEN ____.
- iii. [ANNE?] WELLS, b. [say 1545]; perhaps one of the Anne Ashtons bur. at Folksworth in 1610 or 1617, the other probably her granddaughter; m. WILLIAM ASHTON.^[93] He was likely the William Ashton, senior bur. at Folksworth in 1611. Children, probably all baptized at Folksworth:
 1. *Alice Ashton*, b. [say 1564], named in will of her uncle Raffé Wells; m. ____ *Hoddie*.
 2. *Thomas Ashton*, b. [say 1565]; living in 1589 when he was named in his uncle's will.
 3. *Henry Ashton*, bp. 18 Jan. 1566/67.
 4. *Cisley Ashton*, bp. 25 Feb. 1567/68; bur. at Folksworth in 1575.
 5. *Elizabeth Ashton*, bp. 13 Feb. 1571/72; living in 1589 when she was named in her uncle's will.
 6. *Susanna Ashton*, bp. 13 Oct. 1573.
 7. *Joana Ashton*, bp. 6 March 1575/76.
 8. *John Ashton*, bp. 18 Jan. 1577/78; bur. at Folksworth in 1579.
 9. *William Ashton*, bp. 13 Feb. 1578/79; will dated 8 Dec. 1655, proved 31 Oct. 1656; bur. at Folksworth in 1656; m. *Philip* ____, who he names as his widow.^[94]
 10. *Lucy Ashton*, bp. 18 May 1581; bur. at Folksworth in 1581.
- iv. ROBERT WELLS, b. [say 1547]; bur. at Folksworth, 24 May 1589;^[95] will dated 7 March 1589/90, proved 25 March 1590; m. SUSANNA _____. His will names children Richard, Raffé, William, Hugh, Alice, Anna, Susanna, and Elizabeth, as well as his widow.^[96] He names his "brethren" John and Thomas Wells as supervisors of the estate. He is a legatee in his brother Raffé's

⁹² Fotheringhay parish registers, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*. Ancestry.com, 2014.

⁹³ The 1589 will of Raffé Wells [see note 9] and the 1560 will of John Loftes [see note 8] remember the families of Thomas Ashton of Armston and William Ashton of Ashton, suggesting the families were related before a Wells daughter married William Ashton.

⁹⁴ Will of William Ashton of Folksworth, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/257/695.

⁹⁵ The burial is of course almost a year before the will was written, and is perhaps a mistranscription for 24 March 1589. M. Stevenson, trans., *Folksworth, St. Helen, Huntingdonshire: baptisms, 1563–1965; marriages, 1563–1965; banns, 1755–1811, 1824–1964; burials, 1563–1965* (Huntingdon, England: 2005) [hereinafter Stevenson, trans., *Folksworth Parish Register*]. With thanks to Margaret Long for reviewing the records on my behalf.

⁹⁶ Will of Robert Wells, husbandman of Folksworth, Commissary Court of Lincoln for the Archdeaconry of Huntingdon, 1590, vol. 15, folio 159 [FHL film 187,863] [note 17].

will.^[97] All of his children save Anna appear in the baptismal records of Folksworth. The cluster of deaths in late winter 1589/90—Robert, two of his children, and his brother Raffe—suggests a plague hit the village.

Children, all baptized at Folksworth, possibly all by Susanna:^[98]

1. *Richard Wells*, bp. 1 March 1568; bur. at Folksworth, 6 March 1589/90.
 2. *Robert Wells*, bp. 5 Nov. 1570.
 3. *Raffe Wells*, bp. 18 Feb. 1573. Given his father's will left him land in Great Gidding, he is probably the Raffe Wells of that village whose will was proved in 1620, and to whom several children were baptized between 1599 and 1614.^[99]
 4. *William Wells*, bp. 20 Nov. 1576. Likely the William Wells who had children baptized at Great Gidding.^[100]
 5. *Alice Wells*, bp. 9 March 1578.
 6. *Anna Wells*, b. [say 1580]. Named in her father's will.
 7. *Hugh Wells*, bp. 28 Feb. 1582.
 8. *Susanna Wells*, bp. 26 Nov. 1585; bur. at Folksworth, 10 March 1589/90.
 9. *Elizabeth Wells*, bp. 15 Apr. 1588.
3. v. THOMAS WELLS, b. ca. 1551; m. ETHELDREDA ____.
- vi. NICHOLAS WELLS, b. [say 1553]; he is a legatee in the will of John Loftes but not of Raffe Wells. He is very likely the Nicholas Wells bur. at Hemington, 5 Nov. 1582.^[101]
- vii. RAFFE WELLS, b. [say 1555]; bur. at Folksworth, 14 Apr. 1589,^[102] will dated 8 Apr. 1589, when the testator was of Chellington, Bedfordshire, proved 1589.^[103] The will is full of genealogical information, listing the following relations:

Siblings: Robert Wells, John Wells, Mr. Thomas Wells, Edward Wells, an unnamed brother Ashton, and Richard Osbourne (called a "kinsman," with children "had by my own sister Adlin").

Nieces and Nephews: Raffe Wells (the son of Robert Wells), unnamed children of brother John Wells, William Ashton, Elizabeth Ashton, Thomas Ashton, Alice Hoddie (a daughter of brother Ashton), William Wells (called a kinsman, son of brother Mr. Thomas Wells); Susan Wells (called a kinswoman, daughter of brother Mr. Thomas Wells), Agnes Bateman.

Unspecified kin: Richard Wells, Michael Wells, William Ashton, Thomas Ashton, Eusabis Barwick.

Godchildren: Susan Malins, Robert Sanders, Margaret Richardson.

Overseer: Thomas Ashton of Folksworth.

⁹⁷ Will of Raffe Wells [note 9].

⁹⁸ Stevenson, *Folksworth Parish Register* [note 95].

⁹⁹ Will of Ralph Wells, husbandman of Great Gidding, Commissary Court of Lincoln for the Archdeaconry of Huntingdon, 1620, vol. 21, folio 462 [FHL film 187,867]; Parish Registers for Great Gidding, 1574–1877 [FHL film 1,040,989].

¹⁰⁰ Parish Registers for Great Gidding, 1574–1877 [FHL film 1,040,989].

¹⁰¹ Hemington parish registers [note 65].

¹⁰² Stevenson, *Folksworth Parish Registers* [note 95].

¹⁰³ Will of Raffe Wells [see note 9]. The date of probate is missing.

Executors: Brother John Wells and kinsman Eusabis Barwick.

Witnesses: Clement Cook, William Ashton, and Richard Wells

viii. EDWARD WELLS, b. [say 1557]; he is a legatee in his brother Raffé's will.

2. **JOHN^B WELLS** (*Hugh^C*) was born [say 1543]. He was buried at Ringstead, Northamptonshire, 18 March 1617/18.^[104] He made his will on 20 January 1617/18, and it was proved 25 March 1618.^[105] As Douglas Richardson noted in *The American Genealogist*, he was a freeholder at Ringstead in 1604–05, and was taxed there for weapons and armor through 1618, after which his heirs were assessed with those of Thomas Aspen.^[106] His will names in pertinent part his brother Thomas, Thomas's sons William, John, and Michael, and the testator's grandchildren Euseby and Lewis Barwick.^[107] A wife, **HELEN** _____, was buried at Ringstead on 22 May 1612.^[108]

Children, some or all possibly by Helen:

- i. Daughter WELLS, b. [say 1564]; m. EUSEBY BARWICK. He was named in the wills of his father-in-law and his wife's uncle, Raffé Wells. They had issue, all baptized in Ringstead:
 1. *Ann Barwick*, bp. 20 Dec. 1584.
 2. *Robert Barwick*, bp. 20 Nov. 1586.
 3. *Etheldred Barwick*, bp. 28 Sept. 1589.
 4. *Euseby Barwick*, bp. 23 June 1591.
 5. *Lewis Barwick*, bp. 28 Feb. 1592/93.
4. ii. ISABEL WELLS, b. ca. 1565; m. SIMON TUTTLE.
- iii. ETHELDRED WELLS, b. [say 1572]; m. at Ringstead, 13 July 1595, WILLIAM MORTON. They had issue, all baptized in Ringstead:
 1. *John Morton*, bp. 20 May 1596.
 2. *Elizabeth Morton*, bp. 15 Dec. 1597.
 3. *Etheldred Morton*, bp. 18 Dec. 1599.

3. **REV. THOMAS^B WELLS** (*Hugh^C*) was born about 1551 ("almost 100" in 1642).^[109] He died 5 August 1642, and was buried two days later at St. Mary's, Carlton, Bedfordshire.^[110] He m. [say 1574], **ETHELDREDA** _____.

¹⁰⁴ Ringstead parish registers, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*. Ancestry.com, 2014.

¹⁰⁵ Greene, "Origin of John Tuttle of Ipswich, Massachusetts," *The American Genealogist* 54 (1978):169–70 [note 11].

¹⁰⁶ David L. Greene with notes contributed by Douglas Richardson, "Tuttles Revisited," *The American Genealogist* 59 (1983):215.

¹⁰⁷ Greene, "Origin of John Tuttle," *The American Genealogist* 54:169–70 [note 11]. Greene reads the decidedly unclear handwriting to say "Custby Barwek," but with reference to the Ringstead parish records, lately available online, the given name was "Euseby" or its variants. The name, honoring the sainted Greek historian Eusebius, was current in contemporary Northamptonshire.

¹⁰⁸ Ringstead parish records ("Helenne Wells wyfe of John Wells was buried this xxiind of Maye.") [see note 104].

¹⁰⁹ Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13], (*Carlton*), B-i.

¹¹⁰ *Ibid.*; see also Chellington parish register [FHL film 952,423], which gives a burial date of 7 Aug. 1643, surely in error.

If he matriculated at Cambridge or Oxford, there is little evidence of it.^[111] He was ordained deacon and priest in 1570, then was admitted to the vicarage of “Milton Harneys”^[112] on 19 March 1572/73.^[113] He was replaced by Henry Ledsham a short time later, in October 1574.^[114] He seems to have been admitted to the rectory in Chellington at roughly the same time, 5 February 1572/73, though the corresponding marginal entry does not appear in the Bishop of Lincoln’s Act book until 1574.^[115] He acquired as well the parsonage of neighboring Carlton on 29 March 1576 at the nomination of Nicholas Vaux, whose family held the advowson.^[116] He remained at the posts of Carlton and Chellington, evidently an unabashed pluralist, for nearly seventy years.^[117]

In 1593, Wells bought land in Chellington from the Earl of Kent and his brother.^[118] Wells’s talents, whatever they were, were appreciated by his wealthy parishioner William Goddard, who in 1615 placed him, along with Oliver St. John of Bletsoe, Amias Pawlett, and John Marshall of Watton, as trustee to his lands on behalf of Edith Pawlett and her son, the settlor’s grandson William Goddard.^[119] Goddard left Wells 15 shillings in his will the same year.^[120] In 1623, Wells purchased more property in Carlton and Chellington from Edmund Green and his wife Agnes.^[121]

Etheldreda “w of Tho Welles” was buried at Carlton on 24 February 1623/24.^[122] The record of rectors at Carlton St. Mary, held at the Bedfordshire Archives, states that Thomas “had two sons by Mary his wife — John and Thomas.”^[123] This record, likely written long after the fact, is the only indication that Rev. Thomas may have had two wives. It is unlikely as well that he had a son named Thomas.^[124] Given (1) the relative rarity of the name; (2) that Thomas’s brother John christened a daughter Etheldred around the time Thomas would have first married; and (3) that no other potential wife appears in the Carlton and Chellington registers, either in marriage or burial, it is likely but not certain that she was the mother of all his children.

¹¹¹ He does not appear in Foster’s or Venn’s alumni (see notes 18 and 34), but occasionally appears with an MA in the Bishop of Lincoln’s records. Most detailed, and probably most conclusively, the 1604 visitation tags him “noe graduate.” Clergy of the Church of England Database [note 14], Record 35444. Person ID #153775].

¹¹² Now Milton Ernest.

¹¹³ Foster, *Lincoln episcopal records*, 57 [note 12]. (“Sir Thomas Welles, cl. to the vic. of Milton Harneys, vac. by death. P.—the queen. At Buckden, 19 Mar.”)

¹¹⁴ *Ibid.*, 59.

¹¹⁵ *Ibid.*, 58 (“Chellington rectory--[*marginal heading only*]. [*I Thomas Welles, cl., rector of Chellington, ‘volens subscripsi’; 5 Feb 1572/73, for institution (Reg. 43d.)*]”).

¹¹⁶ *Ibid.*, 60. (“Sir Thomas Welles, cl. to the ch. of Carlton, vac. by death. P.—Nicholas Vaux, esq. At Buckden, 29 Mar.”)

¹¹⁷ For nearly this entire period—from 1571 until 1635—the rectors at the neighboring parsonage of Odell were the Puritan Bulkeleyes: Edward and his son Peter, who ultimately left for New England.

¹¹⁸ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online], Ref: LJeayes339.

¹¹⁹ The National Arches, Ref.: WARD 2/13A/48/33.

¹²⁰ Will of William Goddard, gent., Chellington, PCC (note 2), PROB 11/125/645.

¹²¹ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online], Ref: GA1083.

¹²² Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13], (*Carlton*), B27.

¹²³ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: Fasti/1/Carl.

¹²⁴ See Note 145, below.

Children of Rev. Thomas and Etheldreda (____) Wells, all baptized at Chellington:^[125]

5. i. MICHAEL WELLS, bp. 9 March 1576/77; m. FRANCES HALL.
- ii. SUSAN WELLS, bp. 27 Oct. 1583; likely m. at Carlton 22 Dec. 1602, WILLIAM CARTER.^[126] No further record found.
6. iii. REV. WILLIAM WELLS, bp. 14 Sept. 1589; m. AGNES TAPP.
- iv. REV. JOHN WELLS, bp. 7 Jan. 1591/92; bur. at Thurning, Huntingdonshire, 4 Oct. 1664;^[127] m. (1) at Thorpe Achurch, Northamptonshire, 23 Nov. 1624, SUSANNA DILLINGHAM of Cranford, Northamptonshire;^[128] m. (2) at Hemington, Northamptonshire, 26 April 1652, MRS. SUSANNA (SELBY) HERBERT.^[129]

He matriculated at Brasenose College, Oxford, 7 April 1609, age 16, received his BA on 21 Oct. 1612, and his MA 7 June 1615.^[130] He was ordained at Peterborough in 1619.^[131] His father, who acquired the advowson of Thurning in 1617, gave the job to his son in 1627.^[132] He was incumbent at that benefice until his death.

Both of Wells's wives were related to the Dillinghams, a family in which it seems every other member was a cleric. His first wife was b. ca. 1600 probably at Cranford, where her father was rector, to Rev. Thomas and Katherine (Marston) Dillingham,^[133] and d. between 23 Jan. 1646/47, when her brother William named her in his will, and 26 April 1652, when her husband remarried. Quite likely she was the unnamed wife of John Wells buried at Barnwell St. Andrew in Feb. 1646/47.^[134] We may infer she was literate and intellectually curious: William left her his three volumes of "Master Perkins," surely the Puritan theologian William Perkins.^[135]

¹²⁵ Chellington parish register [FHL film 952,423].

¹²⁶ Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13], (*Carlton*), B16. This marriage appears only in the bishop's transcripts.

¹²⁷ Thurning parish register, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*: Ancestry.com, 2014 ("John Welles Clark was buried the 4th of October 1664"). The village of Thurning is partially in Northamptonshire, but the church is in Huntingdonshire.

¹²⁸ Thorpe Achurch parish register (see note 54).

¹²⁹ Hemington parish register (see note 64).

¹³⁰ Foster, *Alumni Oxon*, [note 18], 4:1596.

¹³¹ *Clergy of the Church of England Database* [note 14], Record ID #105636.

¹³² Page et al., *History of Huntingdon*, 3:112; *Clergy of the Church of England Database* [note 14], Record ID #130856.

¹³³ Taplin, 3, 7. [note 53]. See also Winthrop Alexander, *A Genealogy of the Dillingham Family of New England* (unpublished: mimeographed 1943), 11. For the evidence that Susanna belongs to this family of Dillinghams, see the will of John Wells (note 64) and those of his brothers-in-law Rev. Thomas Dillingham of Barnwell (PCC [note 2], PROB 11/200/779) and Rev. William Dillingham of Barton Seagrave (PCC, PROB 11/200/293), the first naming his "brother" John Wells of Thurning and the second naming his "loving sister Mistress Susanna Wells of Thurning."

¹³⁴ Barnwell St. Andrew parish register, indexed and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *Northamptonshire, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1532–1812*: Ancestry.com, 2014 ("John Wells his wife buried February").

¹³⁵ Will of Rev. William Dillingham of Barton Seagrave, PCC (note 2), PROB 11/200/293.

John's second wife was b. ca. 1600, likely a daughter of William and Thomasine (Dillingham) Selby of Oundle;^[136] she was bur. at Thurning, 1 Feb. 1658.^[137] She m. (1) at Wilden, Bedfordshire, 9 May 1620, **JOHN^A HERBERT**, alderman and shoemaker of Northampton.^[138] Two of Herbert's children by his first marriage immigrated to the Massachusetts Bay Colony, namely Elizabeth¹ (Herbert) (White) Corwin and John¹ Herbert.^[139]

His will, signed 5 Sept. 1664 and proved 14 Nov. 1664, is rich in genealogical and biographical detail.^[140] Though an Oxford man, he devised the advowson of Thurning to Emmanuel College, Cambridge, on the condition they make his friend Samuel Byrd of Hemington the next incumbent. In return for his lands in Thurning, he endowed a rentcharge of £4 per annum to be paid by the rector to Emmanuel College, which the College was in turn to use for the maintenance of a "poore scholar." He further required 20 shillings per year be distributed to the poor of Thurning. To his nephew Thomas Wells, gentleman of Glatton, he left occupied land in Carleton and Chellington, on the condition that the said Thomas pay his siblings William and Frances ten pounds apiece. To his nephews Mr. William Wells of Ampthill and Edward Wells of Caldecot he left occupied land in Thurning. He left more occupied land in Carlton and Chellington to his niece Mary Wheeler, née Wells, provided she pay ten pounds apiece to her sisters Judith and Elizabeth. To his son-in-law Daniel Herbert, linen draper of Northampton, and his wife Elizabeth, he left half of a corner house in Northampton, the other half (then occupied by Jeremy Herbert) he left to John Richardson and his wife Mary of Stamford, Lincolnshire.

Wells then made monetary bequests to a series of other relatives and friends, *viz.*: cousin Mary, the wife of Richard Elstoe of Aldwinckle; niece Agnes Pallmer, the late wife of George Pallmer; nephews William Palmer and his brother George, sons of Peter Pallmer; cousin Dr. William Dillingham of Oundle and his sisters Katherine and Elizabeth; cousin Benjamin Dillingham, Minister of Oundle; Edward and Dorothy Cawthorne, children of cousin Edward Cawthorne, clerke; cousin Mr. Samuel Dillingham of London; niece Susan Barton the wife of Richard Barton; cousin William Dillingham of Nassington and his sister Sarah of Stamford; William [Ffieldson?] of [??] and Elizabeth, his wife's sister; niece Susan Larrat of Fotheringhay; son-in-law Samuel Herbert; servant William Clarke; old servant Thomas Stocke; sister and widow Dorothy Dillingham; Susan Samuell, widow of Richard Samuell; John Smart of Higham; Elizabeth Freeman, wife of George Freeman of Higham; and

¹³⁶ See discussion, above.

¹³⁷ Thurning parish register ("Susanna Weles the wife of John Weles Minnester was buried the first day of February 1658").

¹³⁸ Wilden parish register [note 69].

¹³⁹ Craig Partridge. "Elizabeth Herbert Wife of (1) John White and (2) George Corwin," *Register* 150 (1996):190–91].

¹⁴⁰ Will of John Wells, PCC [note 64].

William Dillingham, brother of Elizabeth Freeman. Wells left to Mr. Thomas Dillingham of Barnwell the first pick of his divinity books, with Mr. John Balderston the pick of anything left.^[141] The residuary legatees were William Goodfellow of Cranford, “nephew by marriage,” and Edward Wells of Glatton, who was also named executor. Dr. William Dillingham and Samuel Byrd were named overseers.

4. **ISABEL^A WELLS** (*John^B, Hugh^C*) was born about 1565 (her age was given as 70 on the 1635 passenger list)^[142] and was married about 1592 to **SIMON^A TUTTLE**. He was born about 1560 and was buried at Ringstead, Northamptonshire, 15 June 1630. Isabel was slated to be a passenger on *The Planter*, but does not appear in New England records.

Children of Simon and Isabel (Wells) Tuttle:^[143]

- i. RICHARD, b. ca. 1593; d. Boston, Mass., 8 May 1640; m. Barnwell St. Andrew, Northamptonshire, 19 June 1622, ANNE TAYLOR.
- ii. JOHN, b. ca. 1596; d. Carrickfergus, Ireland, 30 Dec. 1656; m. ca. 1627, JOAN (ANTROBUS) LAWRENCE.
- iii. THOMAS, b. ca. 1600; d. bef. 19 Dec. 1627.
- iv. SIMON, b. ca. 1604; prob. the man bur. Burton Latimer, Northamptonshire, 26 June 1624.
- v. WILLIAM, bp. Ringstead, 26 Dec. 1607; d. New Haven, Conn., spring 1673, m. ELIZABETH _____.

5. **MICHAEL^A WELLS** (*Rev. Thomas^B, Hugh^C*) was baptized at Chellington, 9 March 1576/77. He was married about 1601 to **FRANCES HALL**, daughter of William Hall of Acton, Middlesex.^[144] Frances’s brother John Hall was married at Stratford-upon-Avon, Warwickshire, 5 June 1607, to Susanna Shakespeare, daughter of William and Anna (Hathaway) Shakespeare.^[145]

Children of Michael and Frances (Hall) Wells, all baptized at Glatton, Huntingdonshire:^[146]

¹⁴¹ Balderston, who was to become vice-chancellor of Cambridge, was at this time a fellow of Emmanuel College, and a Thurning lad in whom John Wells was perhaps the first to notice an aptitude [Venn, *Alumni Cantabrig.* [note 34], 1:73].

¹⁴² Hotten [note 44], 48.

¹⁴³ The family is outlined here only in brief so as not to unnecessarily recapitulate published research. For the sources of this treatment and much more besides, see Greene, *The American Genealogist* 54:167–74; Greene and Richardson, *The American Genealogist* 59:211–15; Donald Lines Jacobus and Edgar Francis Waterman, *Hale, House, and Related Families* (Hartford, Conn.: 1952), 771–75; Anderson, *Great Migration* Vol. VII [note 45], 125–145.

¹⁴⁴ Gray, *The Genealogists’ Magazine* (Sept. 1936) 7:349–50.

¹⁴⁵ *Ibid.*; Stratford-upon-Avon, Holy Trinity parish register, available online at *Shakespeare Documented*, <https://shakespearedocumented.folger.edu/file/dr2431-marriage-register-folio-11-recto>.

¹⁴⁶ Glatton parish register, index only at Ancestry.com. *England & Wales, Christening Index, 1530–1980* [database on-line]. Ancestry.com, 2008.

- i. THOMAS WELLS,^[147] bp. 3 Jan 1601/02; bur. at Chellington, 3 Nov. 1670;^[148] m. (1) at Chellington, 5 March 1628,^[149] JUDITH WALCOTT, daughter of William and Agnes (Leake) Walcott of Walcot, Lincolnshire;^[150] m. (2) ca. 1638, BRIDGET _____. Judith was bp. at Walcot, 10 Dec. 1601^[151] and was bur. at Carlton, 11 Jan. 1637/38.^[152] Second wife Bridget was bur. at Carlton, 10 Feb. 1642/43.^[153] Both wives were buried shortly after the baptisms of their youngest children, suggesting complications of childbirth. He is possibly the Bedfordshire man Foster observed matriculating at Hart Hall, Oxford, 2 Nov. 1621, aged 18, taking a BA 26 Jan. 1623/24.^[154] He made his will 5 Sept. 1670 and it was proved in Nov. 1670.^[155] In that document, heavily damaged, Thomas left to his eldest son Thomas a perfunctory gift in acknowledgment of the lands he had already gifted him in Glatton, to son William lands in Sharnbrook, Bedfordshire, that had passed through William's mother, and to daughter Frances a house. The same three children were named in the will of Rev. John Wells of Thurning, suggesting no others survived to adulthood.

Children, the first two by Judith and the last three by Bridget, all baptized at Carlton:^[156]

1. *Thomas Wells*, bp. 6 Nov. 1635.
2. *Frances Wells*, bp. 5 Jan. 1636/37.
3. *John Wells*, bp. 14 Sept. 1639; bur. at Carlton, 21 Apr. 1641.
4. *William Wells*, 18 July 1641/42.
5. *John Wells*, bp. 6 Feb. 1642/43.

¹⁴⁷ In 1669, Thomas Wells of Chellington sold the property his grandfather had purchased from the earl of Kent [Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online], Ref: GA1231-3]. The deed calls his father "Thomas Wells of Glatton, Huntingdonshire, gentleman," and his grandfather "Thomas Wells late of Carlton, clerk." This first, intermediate Thomas Wells is surely an archival phantom, likely a mistake for Michael, who was indeed a gentleman of Glatton. Michael and Rev. William are called the "eldest" and "second son" respectively in the *Tappe v. Wells* matter, meaning the birth of this Thomas "of Glatton" would have to fit into an improbably narrow window for his putative son's 1628 marriage to be plausible, if still unlikely on its own account. As "Thomas Wells of Carlton, gent." the son was called "my cousin" in the 1669 will of Elizabeth Hall, Lady Bernard, his aunt [Gray, 348].

¹⁴⁸ Chellington parish register [see note 110].

¹⁴⁹ *Ibid.*

¹⁵⁰ A. R. Maddison, ed., *Lincolnshire Pedigrees* (London: 1902), 1032-33. Therein the husband of Judith is called only "--- Wells" but see the Bedfordshire Archives' abstract of the will of John Fitzioffrey or Fitzjeffrey for strong circumstantial evidence he was the Fitzjeffrey Maddison has espoused to Judith's sister Cicely, and that he was closely associated with Thomas Wells and Humphrey Walcott, both overseers of his estate and both likely his brothers-in-law [BASC Ref: X126/34].

¹⁵¹ Walcot parish register, "England, Lincolnshire, Parish Registers, 1538-1990," database, FamilySearch (<https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:QPR7-67GX> : 17 January 2020). This record is incorrectly indexed as "Edythe" rather than "Judythe" Walcot.

¹⁵² Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13] (*Carlton*), B27 ("Judith wife of Tho Welles").

¹⁵³ *Ibid.* ("Bridget wife of Tho Welles").

¹⁵⁴ Foster, *Alumni Oxon* [note 18], 4:1596.

¹⁵⁵ Will of Thomas Wells, Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref:ABP/W1670/232.

¹⁵⁶ Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13] (*Carlton*), B4-5.

- ii. EDWARD WELLS, bp. 23 Oct. 1603. He is probably the Edward Wells of Glatton, gent. who was a residuary legatee and sole executor of his uncle John Wells's will. The Edward Wells of Caldecote, also named, is perhaps a son of this Edward, and perhaps as well the man bur. there 20 Apr. 1680.^[157] Children, baptized at Glatton:^[158]
1. *Mary Wells*, bp. 25 Dec. 1634.
 2. *Michael Wells*, bp. 11 Sept. 1636.
- iii. ANNA WELLS, bp. 27 Oct. 1605; m. at Thurning, 4 May 1630, GEORGE PALMER, a yeoman of Glatton.^[159] George Palmer was bp. at Glatton, 8 May 1601; bur. there 7 Apr. 1659.^[160] Their children, baptized at Glatton:^[161]
1. *George Palmer*, bp. 13 Jan. 1631/32.
 2. *Frances Palmer*, bp. Nov. 1641.
 3. *Francis Palmer*, bp. 4 Feb. 1643.
 4. *Thomas Palmer*, bp. 11 Nov. 1645.
 5. *Ann Palmer*, bp. 24 June 1648.
- iv. ELIZABETH WELLS, bp. 18 Oct. 1607; bur. at Carlton, 29 Aug. 1623.^[162]
- v. DOROTHY WELLS, bp. 7 Jan. 1609; m. at Thurning, 25 July 1633, WILLIAM CLARKE.^[163] They had issue, at least some baptized at Glatton, but more research is needed to distinguish their children from those of another William Clarke.
- vi. SARAH WELLS, bp. 19 Jan. 1611; bur. at Glatton 25 May 1645; m. at Glatton, 1631, PETER PALMER.^[164] He was bp. at Glatton, 30 June 1605, son of George Palmer; bur. there 6 Aug. 1645.^[165] They had issue baptized in Glatton, two of whom were living in 1664 and named in Rev. John Wells' will:
1. *Francis Palmer*, bp. 20 Apr. 1632.
 2. *George Palmer*, bp. 13 Aug. 1634.
 3. *Edward Palmer*, bp. 14 Aug. 1636.
 4. *William Palmer*, bp. 16 Sept. 1638.
 5. *Michael Palmer*, bp. 26 Dec. 1641.
 6. *Peter Palmer*, bp. 26 Apr. 1645.
- vii. JAMES WELLS, bp. 26 Dec. 1614. No further record.

¹⁵⁷ National Burial Index for England and Wales, available at findmypast.com. He is very probably *not* the Edward Wells named as a brother in the 1653 will of William Hull of Barnwell, Northants, but it's tempting to make the connection. Both Hull and a man named William Wells were teachers at Parson Nicholas Latham's schools, and both Hull and Rev. John Wells shared a close connection with Lord Montagu of Boughton. But this second Edward Wells was a cleric [*Hull v. Wells*, 1660, TNA Ref: C 5/35/40] and he was almost certainly of a (so far) unrelated Barnwell family (see Venn, *Alumni Cantabrig*. [note 34] 1:4:362).

¹⁵⁸ Glatton parish register [note 146].

¹⁵⁹ Thurning parish register [note 127]. She is named in the 1664 will of her uncle Rev. John Wells as "Agnes Pallmer, widdow the late wife of George Pallmer."

¹⁶⁰ Glatton parish register [note 146].

¹⁶¹ *Ibid.*

¹⁶² Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13] (*Carlton*), B27.

¹⁶³ Thurning parish register [note 127].

¹⁶⁴ Glatton parish register [note 146].

¹⁶⁵ *Ibid.*

viii. JOHN WELLS, bp. 25 April 1617; m. at Carlton, 16 Jan. 1638/39, LETTICE BODDINGTON.^[166] She was b. [say 1618] to Henry and Anne (____) Boddington of Chellington. Henry left a will probated 22 Nov. 1658, wherein he names his daughter “Lettice Wells the wife of John Wells” and a grandson John Wells.^[167] Thomas Wells and Thomas Wells, Jr. were witnesses. They therefore had at least one son:

1. *John Wells.*

ix. WILLIAM WELLS, bp. 21 Feb. 1618. He is perhaps the William Welles, schoolmaster, held by the churchwardens of Ampthill, Bedfordshire, to indemnify public charges on the town in 1662 and 1664, though more likely that was a nephew, son of Thomas and Judith (Walcott) Wells.^[168]

6. REV. WILLIAM^A WELLS (*Rev. Thomas^B, Hugh^C*) was baptized by his father at Chellington, 14 September 1589.^[169] He “is said to have been buried” at Moulsoe, Buckinghamshire, 2 September 1656.^[170] He married, not long after December 1616, **AGNES^A TAPP**, daughter of Edmund^B and Margaret (____) Tapp of Felmersham, and sister of the New Haven immigrant Edmund Tapp.^[171]

He is very likely the William Welles of Bedfordshire who matriculated at St. Mary Hall, Oxford 30 Oct. 1607, aged 18. He took a BA from Oriel College, 21 Jan. 1610/11, and an MA 9 July 1613.^[172] Foster speculates this graduate was rector of Ickworth and Reckham (or Rougham), Suffolk, but far more likely it was a local man of the same name.^[173] Indeed, William was serving as curate of Carlton as early as 1614, despite not being ordained; his father paid him a stipend while the older man performed the services at Chellington.^[174]

Wells was “of Chellington” by 1627/28, when he appointed his brother-in-law Valentine Lawrence of Crawley Green, Luton, as attorney to take possession of property in Luton which Wells had purchased of Abraham Crawley.^[175] Wells sold that land shortly before his death to Sir Robert Napier, of Luton Hoo, a family with which Lawrence had long association in Luton.^[176]

¹⁶⁶ Emmison, *Bedfordshire Registers* [note 13], B17.

¹⁶⁷ Will of Henry Boddington, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/283/518.

¹⁶⁸ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: P30/13/1/1/4; BRO Ref: P30/13/1/1/6.

¹⁶⁹ Chellington parish register [note 110].

¹⁷⁰ Ratcliff, *History and Antiquities of the Newport Pagnell Hundreds*, 320 [note 35]. Ratcliff gives no source and the Moulsoe registers are silent on the question and moreover, likely incomplete.

¹⁷¹ *Tappe v. Wells* [note 22]; Partridge, “Origins of Edmund Tapp,” *The American Genealogist* 72 (1997):65–80 [note 24].

¹⁷² Foster, *Alumni Oxon.* [note 18], 4:1596

¹⁷³ Venn, *Alumni Cantabrig.* [note 34] 1:4:364.

¹⁷⁴ Clergy of the Church of England [note 14], Record #5444 showing the personnel at Chellington in 1614 (“No priest. Not licensed. Stipend: ‘He maintaineth him because he is child.’”); Clergy of the Church of England Record #35230 showing the 1616 subscription book (“to serve the cure expounde & catechise”).

¹⁷⁵ See note 31.

¹⁷⁶ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: DW114. For the Lawrence/Napier association, see e.g., Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: AD801. William Wells was also a patient of Napier’s brother, the physician and astrologer Richard Napier [Lauren Kassell, Michael Hawkins, Robert Ralley, John Young, Joanne Edge, Janet Yvonne Martin-Portugues, and Natalie Kaoukji (eds.), ‘CASE73667’, *The casebooks of Simon Forman and*

Lawrence could have been Wells's business partner, as they at some point both bought a significant lot of land, cottages, and a malting house in the south of Luton, selling it in April 1655 to Edmund Jones, gentleman of Luton, and his wife Margaret.^[177] As of January 1638/39, Wells also held land in Felmersham, perhaps from his father-in-law.^[178]

As argued above, Parliament appointed Wells to the benefice of Melbourn in 1644 and he was probably still there in 1650 when his daughter Susan was married in Melbourn.^[179] Wells became rector of Moulsoe sometime in the early 1650s, after the sequestration of the incumbent.^[180] That fact—that he was very likely installed twice by the local Committees for Plundered Ministers under the Long Parliament—strongly suggests his theological opinions aligned with theirs.^[181] Further, the terms of his will suggest that he was never quite at home in the parish, and that some of his flock was withholding tithes.^[182]

Wells made his will 24 August 1656, and it was proved at the Prerogative Court of Canterbury on 15 October of the same year. After remembering the poor of Carlton and Chellington (but not Moulsoe), William Wells left most of his household goods (including a “studie of books”) to his unmarried daughters Alice, Judith, and Elizabeth, along with £100 apiece to be paid six months after his decease or on the days of their marriages. He also bequeathed to them £20 in gold and all of his plates save one, to be divided between them. His daughters Elizabeth Wheeler, Anne Augur, and Susan Smith were given 20 shillings apiece, then separately given another 40 shillings apiece. Among other items, he left a small annuity to his grandchild Elizabeth Wheeler, the second daughter of his son-in-law William Wheeler, to be paid until she reached the age of 21. His granddaughter Anne Auger was bequeathed a small annuity on the same basis. The remaining grandchildren were not named, but received a bequest of 20 shillings apiece. His servants, Richard and Marie, received 22 shillings apiece.

Interestingly, he divided among his six daughters in England “all the money lent to [th]e state” if it ever be repaid. The lone son mentioned, Thomas, was deceased, and £5 and land in Chellington given him by William's father, Rev. Thomas, was divided equally between the daughters. Anne Wheeler in New England comes near the end of the will: “if she ever come over again [to England],” she is to share in the Chellington land. Finally, of the “hundred and three pounds” lent to the state, 20 shillings “belongith to my Sister Robert Tapps wife.” Three of the daughters, Alice, Judith, and Elizabeth, were appointed joint executrices, with Robert Tapp, brother-in-law, and William Wheeler, son-in-law, appointed overseers. Witnesses were Joseph Wells and William Janes.

Richard Napier, 1596–1634: a digital edition, <https://casebooks.lib.cam.ac.uk/cases/CASE73667>, accessed 24 July 2020].

¹⁷⁷ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: BH1.

¹⁷⁸ Bedfordshire Archives Service Catalogue [database online] Ref: GA1276.

¹⁷⁹ See note 34.

¹⁸⁰ George Lipscomb, *The History and Antiquities of the County of Buckingham* (London: 1847), 4:254.

¹⁸¹ William Page, ed., *The Victoria History of the County of Buckingham* (London: 1905), 1:327.

¹⁸² Will of William Wells, PCC [note 2], PROB 11/258/333.

The rector closed with a voluminous recitation of debts owed him, beginning with family and associates and closing with his parishioners at Moulsoe. The biggest debtors were his sons-in-law Joseph Augur and William Wheeler (£100 each), and the state (£103). The parishioners, it seems, all owed varying amounts of wool and lamb, coming due on the feast day of Lammas. These were most likely tithes in kind, which would have made up a significant portion of a rector's income; Wells' parishioners were either short on lamb or deliberately withholding, perhaps out of loyalty to their last parson.

Children of Rev. William and Agnes (Tapp) Wells, all baptized at Chellington by his father:^[183]

- i. MARY WELLS, bp. 29 Nov. 1618; bur. at Cranfield, Bedfordshire, 3 Oct. 1684; m. [say 1644], REV. WILLIAM WHEELER. He was bp. at Cranfield, 4 Jan. 1614/15; bur. there 17 March 1667/68, son of John and Elizabeth (_____) Wheeler.^[184] William was brother to the immigrants Mary (Wheeler) Barrett, Elizabeth (Wheeler) Halsey, Sarah (Wheeler) (Nash) (Cooke) (Greene) Wheeler, and Obadiah Wheeler. His brother-in-law Ephraim Wheeler was his first cousin. Wheeler makes little impression on the records until 1660, when the Baptist church at Bedford requested him as pastor, though judging by his prominence in the community he was surely a local personage before that date. By tradition, William instead became the inaugural minister of the East End Baptist Church in Cranfield that same year. His timing was poor. 1660 also saw the restoration of Charles II. In 1664/65, the authorities locked William in the Bedford county jail, probably for violation of the Conventicles Act, forbidding dissenting religious assemblies such as his. There he joined John Bunyan, himself imprisoned since 1660. Perhaps inspired by Bunyan's own scribbling, Wheeler drafted *A Spiritual Portion*, a brief epistle in verse that he called his "last legacy" to his children.
7. ii. ANNE WELLS, bp. 6 May 1621; m. EPHRAIM WHEELER.
- iii. MARGARET WELLS, bp. 16 Aug. 1623; m. at Melbourn, Cambridgeshire, 24 July 1650, JOSEPH ANGER/AUGUR.^[185] At least one child, named in the will of her grandfather Rev. William Wells:
 1. *Anne Anger*.
- iv. SUSAN WELLS, bp. 16 March 1623/24; bur. at Fotheringhay, Northamptonshire, 22 Aug. 1694;^[186] m. (1) _____ SMITH; m. (2) at Stamford, Lincolnshire (recorded also at Fotheringhay), 11 Dec. 1660, THOMAS

¹⁸³ Chellington parish register [note 110].

¹⁸⁴ R. D. Wheeler [note 3], 36–37, save the identification of Mary (Wells) Wheeler, which comes from the will of her father.

¹⁸⁵ England Marriages, 1538–1973 database, FamilySearch (<https://familysearch.org/ark:/61903/1:1:N2QX-868> : 10 December 2014), Joseph Anger and Margaret Welles, 24 Jul 1650; citing Melbourn, Cambridge, England, reference, index based upon data collected by the Genealogical Society of Utah, Salt Lake City [FHL film 990,296].

¹⁸⁶ Fotheringhay parish register (see note 92).

LARRAT.^[187] Thomas Larrat was b. [say 1620]; bur. at Fotheringhay, 25 July 1676.^[188]

Children of Thomas and Susan (Smith) Larrat, all baptized at Fotheringhay:

1. *Martha Larrat*, bp. 13 Oct. 1661.
 2. *Mary Larrat*, bp. 11 June 1663.
 3. *Daniel Larrat*, bp. 6 Aug. 1665.
 4. *Thomas Larrat*, bp. 13 Oct. 1667.
- v. THOMAS WELLS, bp. 7 May 1627; d. before 24 Aug. 1656 when his father made his will. His real property, given him by his grandfather, was redistributed to his unmarried sisters.
- vi. ALICE WELLS, bp. 3 March 1627/28, living at the time of her father's 1658 will. Not named in the 16 Sept. 1664 will of her uncle Rev. John Wells of Thurning, though her sisters Mary, Susan, Judith, and Elizabeth were.
- vii. JUDITH WELLS, bp. 16 Mar. 1630/31; d. between 16 Sept. 1664, when her uncle made his will, and 14 Feb. 1666, when her husband was licensed to marry his second wife; m. at Ampthill, Bedfordshire, 15 Dec. 1656, LEE/LEIGH SADLEIR,^[189] b. ca. 1635, probably one of the youngest children of Thomas Leigh and Frances (Bury) Sadleir of Aspley Guise.^[190] He was a gentleman of an armigerous Bedfordshire family. He m. (2) after 16 Feb. 1664/65 (allegation filed), Margaret Mitchelbourne.^[191] Known children of Judith (Wells) and Lee Sadleir:
1. *Lee Sadleir*, b. ca. 1657; bur. at St. John Hackney, London, 13 Feb. 1697.^[192]
 2. [perhaps] *Mary Sadleir*.
- viii. ELIZABETH WELLS, bp. 24 Oct. 1633. Named in her uncle's 16 Sept. 1664 will. No further record found.

¹⁸⁷ *Ibid.*; Stamford St. George parish register, available online from the Lincolnshire County Council, www.lincstothepast.co.uk ("Thomas Larrat and Susana Smith Widd were married December 11 1660"). Her father calls her Susan Smith in his 1658 will. Her uncle Rev. John Wells of Thurning calls her Susan Larrat of Fotheringhay in his.

¹⁸⁸ Fotheringhay parish register (see note 92).

¹⁸⁹ Emmison, *Bedfordshire Parish Registers (Ampthill)* [note 13], A60.

¹⁹⁰ Frederic A. Blades, ed., *The Visitations of Bedfordshire, Annis Domini 1566, 1582 and 1634* (London: 1884) 136–37. The visitation of 1634 shows Thomas Leigh and Frances (Bury) Sadleir with eight children, the fourth son named Leigh. As Leigh was only about thirty years old at his second marriage, (i.e., born about 1635), the order of children is either wrong or the Visitation's Leigh died before the next Leigh was born.

¹⁹¹ Joseph Lemuel Chester and George J. Armytage, eds., *Allegations for Marriage Licenses Issued by the Dean and Chapter of Westminster, 1558 to 1669* (London: 1886), 101.

¹⁹² St. John at Hackney, Middlesex, parish register, index and imaged online at Ancestry.com. *London, England, Church of England Baptisms, Marriages and Burials, 1538–1812* [database online]. Ancestry.com, 2010. His father quitclaimed to his son an interest in an entailed portion of his brother Ralph Sadleir's estate in Feb. 1679/80, on which record the younger Lee is called a citizen and lorimer of London [BAS HO11]. As boys were typically bound at fourteen (eleven at the youngest) for a seven-year apprenticeship before eligibility for London citizenship, the younger Lee was surely born before his father's second marriage in 1664, and therefore a son of Judith.

7. ANNE¹ WELLS (Rev. William^A, Rev. Thomas^B, Hugh^C), baptized by her grandfather at Chellington, 6 May 1621;^[193] died probably in Fairfield County, Connecticut, before 1708;^[194] married ca. 1640, EPHRAIM¹ WHEELER. Anne was named in her father's will as "my daughter Ann Wheeler who now liveth in New England." She is very likely the Ann Wells aged 15 recorded in London as "more for *The Planter*" on 5 April 1635, as well as the Ann Wells aged 20 certified for the *Susan and Ellen* around the same time.^[195]

Ephraim was baptized at Cranfield, Bedfordshire, 16 March 1618/19, son of Thomas and Rebecca (_____) Wheeler, made his will at Fairfield on 22 September 1669, proved there 1 November 1670.^[196] He was still in old England as late as 19 February 1637/38, when he and two brothers sold their jointly owned land in Cranfield,^[197] but in New England when he took the oath of freeman in Boston on 13 March 1638/39.^[198] He moved from Concord to Fairfield in 1644.^[199]

Children of Ephraim¹ and Anne¹ (Wells) Wheeler:^[200]

- i. ISAAC WHEELER, b. at Concord, Mass., 13 Dec. 1642; d. 15 April 1712.
- ii. MARY WHEELER, b. [say 1645]; m. by 1669 _____.
- iii. RUTH WHEELER, b. [say 1648]; made a will 19 Jan. 1718/19; proved at Stratfield, Conn., 10 Feb. 1718/19; m. SAMUEL TREADWELL.
- iv. HANNAH WHEELER, b. [say 1650]; m. at Concord 11 July 1667, SAMUEL SMEDLEY.
- v. REBECCA WHEELER, b. [say 1652]; d. after 1702; m. ca. 1672, SAMUEL GREGORY.
- vi. JUDITH WHEELER, b. [say 1655].
- vii. SAMUEL WHEELER, b. [say 1658]; d. at Hartford, Conn., 29 June 1712; m. by 1686, SARAH GRANT.
- viii. TIMOTHY WHEELER, b. [say 1660]; made a will 13 April 1730, proved 20 June 1730; m. (1) at Stratfield, Conn., 11 April 1689, REBECCA TURNEY; m. (2) MARGERY _____.
- ix. ABIGAIL WHEELER, b. [say 1662]; d. after 1697; m. ca. 1685, SAMUEL WELLES.
- x. EPHRAIM WHEELER, b. [say 1664]; d. before 27 Nov. 1705; m. (1) SARAH TURNEY; m. (2) SARAH SHERWOOD.

Travis Miscia (tdmiscia@gmail.com) is a financial services lawyer. He is interested in the origins of colonial American immigrants.

¹⁹³ Chellington parish register [note 110].

¹⁹⁴ Donald Lines Jacobus, *The Ancestry of Lorenzo Ackley and his Wife Emma Arabella Bosworth* (Woodstock, Vt.: 1960), 54–55. [To accord with R. D. Wheeler.]

¹⁹⁵ Hotten [note 44], 48–49, 59.

¹⁹⁶ Jacobus, *Lorenzo Ackley* [note 194], 54–55.

¹⁹⁷ John Insley Coddington, "The Wheelers of Bedfordshire and New England," *The American Genealogist* 28 (1952):259.

¹⁹⁸ "List of Freemen," *Register* 3 (1849):96.

¹⁹⁹ Jacobus, *Lorenzo Ackley* [note 194], 54–55.

²⁰⁰ *Ibid.*

The English Origin of Zacheus¹ Curtis of Salem, Reading, Gloucester, and Rowley, Massachusetts

Robert Battle*

The family of Zacheus Curtis has been well and thoroughly treated in the genealogical literature, first by Walter Goodwin Davis in two of his seminal multi-ancestor studies^[1] and then by Dean Crawford Smith and Melinde Lutz Sanborn in one of theirs.^[2] All three of these works note that Zacheus Curtis was a passenger on the *James* out of Southampton to New England in 1635, when he was listed as a “laborer” and was said to come from Downton (in Wiltshire). They further say of Zacheus that he was born about 1619, as he gave his age as “about fifty-three years” in a deposition given on 20 March 1671/2;^[3] though given how early this was in the year “about 1618” would probably be more accurate. Finally, all three of these works state that while there are some Curtis entries in the registers of Downton and its neighboring parishes, no record of Zacheus himself could be found there.^[4]

Recently, however, the baptism of a Zacheus Curtis, almost certainly the immigrant, has been found in the parish of Durnford, Wiltshire, about eight miles north of Downton. Vital parts of this entry in the original parish register are too degraded to be read, which may account for its prior lack of discovery; however, the bishop’s transcript for the year in question is extant and legible, recording that “Zacheus fillius Johnis Curtise de Salterton” was baptized there on 12 May 1616 (see below). Besides being relatively close to each other, Downton and Durnford both border on the navigable River Avon. From the Curtis entries recorded in the Downton and Durnford parish registers, it would seem that John^A Curtis married Joan Bishop in Downton in 1607; by 1612 they moved up to Durnford; and then between 1617 and 1624 they moved back down to Downton, where they lived until their deaths in 1637

* With thanks to Ann Sadler, who first found Zacheus Curtis’s baptismal record in the course of a WikiTree challenge for NEHGS and encouraged me to follow up on that clue.

¹ Walter Goodwin Davis, *The Ancestry of Lieut. Amos Towne, 1727–1793, of Arundel, Maine* (Portland, Maine: The Southworth Press, 1927), 53–68, and *The Ancestry of Sarah Stone, Wife of James Patten of Arundel, Maine* (same, 1930), 85–92.

² Dean Crawford Smith and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Ancestry of Eva Belle Kempton 1878–1908, Part II: The Ancestry of Amanda Spiller 1823–1873* (Boston: NEHGS, 2008), 110–141. The immigrant is also dealt with (as “Zaccheus Curtis”) in Robert Charles Anderson, George F. Sanborn, Jr., and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635*, vol. II, C–F (Boston: NEHGS, 2001), 261–64.

³ *Records and Files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County Massachusetts*, vol. 5 1672–1674 (Salem: The Essex Institute, 1916), 28.

⁴ Smith and Sanborn [note 2] report the negative results of a “spiral search” of parish registers starting at Downton, though not how far that spiral extended or which parishes were included in that search (p. 112).

and 1638. The parents or extended families of John^A Curtis and Joan Bishop have not yet been found.^[5]

Curtis and Bishop entries in Downton, Wiltshire:^[6]

Baptisms

1602 Sep 19	Edmund the sonn of John Bishopp
1605 Apr 29	Alice the d of John Byshopp
1609 Nov 28	Mary Bissoppe the daugh of John Bissoppe
1614 Oct 6	William Curtis the sonne of Willm Curtis
1614 Oct 18	John Bishoppe the sonne of John Bishoppe
1616 Nov 17	Als Curtice the daughter of Willia[m] Curtice
1618 Sep 5	Robert Curtice the sonne of Richard Curtice
1618/19 Mar 3	Steeven Curtice the sonne of Willia[m] Curtice
1621 Jul 8	Henry Curtice the sonne of Willia[m] Curtice
1622 Apr 1	Joane the reputed da: of John Bishop
1622/3 Jan 5	Margery Bishop the da: of John Bishop
1623/4 Feb 11	William Curtice the sonne of John Curtice
1625 May 18	Edward Curtice the sonne of William Curtice
1625 Oct 30	George Curtice the sonne of Rich: Curtice
1625/6 Jan 6	Agnes Bishop the da: of John Bishop
1627/8 Mar 7	Edith Curtice the da: of Willia[m] Curtice
1628 Sep 7	John Bishoppe the sonne of Jo: Bishop
1629 Oct 28	Als Curtice the da: of George Curtice
1630/1 Feb 24	Anne the daughter of George Curtis
1632 Aug 18	Bridget the daughter of John Bishop
1633 Jun 10	Jefferey the sonne of Rich. Curtice
1634 May 21	Richard the sonne of Thomas Bishope
1635 Apr 22	Gerard the sonne of George Curtice & of Jane Curtice
1636/7 Jan 8	Als the daughter of Thomas Bishop & Martha Bishop
1637 Apr 5	William the sonne of Jo: Bishop & Edith Bishop

Burials

1604 Jun 25	Elizabeth Bishopp wid
1605 Nov 10	John Bishope of ye Burroughe
1611 Dec 22	John Bishope of the Burroughe
1616 Jun 18	Richard Curtice Coles of Hamptworth
1618 Oct 29	Elizabeth Bishop the wife of Jo: Bishop
1620 Sep 7	Agnes Curtice the wife of Edward Curtice
1621 Jun 16	John Bishop the sonne of John Bishop
1622 May 11	Joane the reputed da: of John Bishop
1624 Apr 7	Willia[m] Curtice the sonne of Jo: Curtice
1624 Jul 14	Als Bishop the wife of Edmond Bishop
1625 Oct 24	Edward Curtice
1626/7 Jan 5	Edmund Bishop

⁵ The extant Downton registers begin too late to record their baptisms if they took place there, and there are no extant Curtis or Bishop probate records from Downton or Durnford that mention these individuals.

⁶ Parish register of Downton, Wiltshire, 1602–1656 (images on ancestry.com). The beginning date of “1602” is the official one listed on the register, though as can be seen below some marriage records survive from a few years earlier. Items in curly brackets are from the Bishop’s Transcripts (images on ancestry.com).

1628 Nov 3	Cicely Curtice
1629 May 15	Edith Curtice the da: of Will: Curtice
1629 Aug 24	Willia[m] Curtice
1629 Oct 6	Robert Curtice the sonne of Rich: Curtice
1635 May 19	Bri{dges} the da: of Jo: Bishop
{1635/6 Mar 7	Margaret the wife of John Bishop}
1637 Aug 21	John Curtice
1638 Jul 1	Joane Curtice vid
1638 Sep 8	Edith the wife of John Bishop
1638 Sep 24	John Bishop
1639 Oct 1	George Curtice

Marriages

1599 Jun 3	John Byshoppe & Elizabethe [blank]
1599 Oct 20	John Shelley & Gellen Byshoppe
1600 Jul 4	John Byshoppe & Elesabeth Laynmb[?]
1607 Apr 8	John Curtis et Joane Bishopp
1614 Oct 23	Mary Noyes & Richard Curtice [<i>sic</i> ; the only wife-husband order on this page]
1616 Nov 22	William Welsteed & Mercy Curtice
1621 Oct 22	John Bishop & Margaret Tut
1627 May 28	Ambrose Chake & Fayth Curtice
1632 Oct --	Thomas Bishop & Martha Goldinge
1634 Apr 14	Richard Huntingferd & Elizabeth Curtice
1636 May 9	Morris Norma[n] & Als Bishop
1637 Oct 5	George Crooche & Anne Curtice

Curtis entries in Durnford, Wiltshire:^[7]

Baptisms

1612 Oct 20	Johns fillius Johanis Curtis de [blank]
1616 {May} 12	Zacheus fillius John -----terton {Zacheus fillius Johnis Curtise de Salterton}

Burials

1617 Dec {15}	---tis filius Johnin Curtis de Salterten {Joh[a]nis fillius Joh[a]ni Curtis}
---------------	--

Marriages: none

Genealogical Summary

JOHN^A CURTIS, born say 1582; buried 21 August 1637 in Downton, Wiltshire; married there 8 April 1607 **JOAN BISHOP** (buried there 1 July 1638).

⁷ Parish register of Durnford, Wiltshire, 1574–1652 (images on ancestry.com), checked through 1640. Items in curly brackets are from the Bishop's Transcripts (images on ancestry.com). Many pages of the register are in poor condition and are largely unreadable.

It would seem that the parish church of Durnford was neglected and in a poor state in this time period. On 15 February 1615/16 the churchwardens of Great Durnford (Nicholas Williams and Gabriel Myles) complained that “the chancell is in decaye and that we have not our monethly sermons . . . [and] there is not a convenient Chushing (cushion) for the pulpit . . . [and] that we have not the booke of homilies”; Hugh Hayward was also accused of letting his hogs “digg and spoyle the church yard” [Prebendal Court of Chute and Chisenbury papers; FHL 1,526,564 item 10].

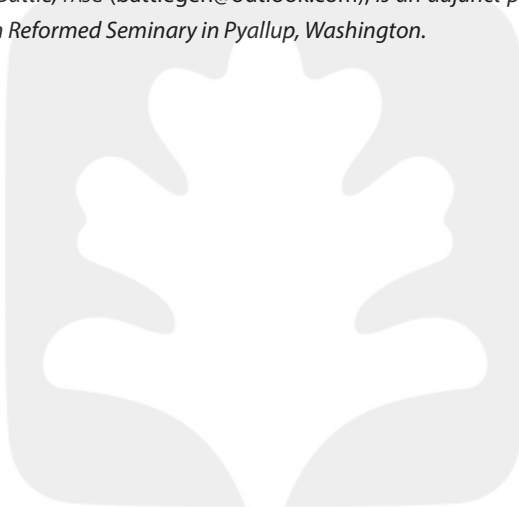
In the Durnford parish register entries in which he appears, John Curtis was said to be “of Salterton,” a western part of the parish, on the Avon.

John Curtis made just a few appearances in the manorial records for Downton.^[8] He paid fines in the courts of 6 April 1627 and 28 March 1628; on 2 October 1632 he was ordered to repair his fireplace; and at the courts of 9 and 19 September 1633 he was a juror.

Known children of John^A and Joan (Bishop) Curtis:

- i. JOHN CURTIS, bp. 20 Oct. 1612 in Durnford, Wiltshire; bur. there 15 Dec. 1617.
- ii. ZACHEUS¹ CURTIS, bp. 12 May 1616 in Durnford. For his career and family in Massachusetts, see the works referenced in notes 1 and 2 above.
- iii. WILLIAM CURTIS, bp. 11 Feb. 1623/4 in Downton; bur. there 7 April 1624.

Robert Battle, FASG (battlegen@outlook.com), is an adjunct professor at Western Reformed Seminary in Pyallup, Washington.



⁸ Downton, Wiltshire, manorial records [FHL 1,526,172 item 5]. There was no reference to him or his widow at the times of their deaths, probably indicating that they did not hold any manorial property.

John Snelling of Boston, Massachusetts, and His Purported Uncle, Dr. William Snelling of Boston

Marjorie P. Snelling

An article published in the July 1898 issue of *The New England Historic Genealogical Society Register*^[1] on Dr. William Snelling of Boston included information on John Snelling, also of Boston. The author stated that John, called “Boston John” in this article, was probably William’s nephew. As evidence, the author cited “An old family paper, dating back to the early part of the last century, expressly states that he was the latter’s nephew.” It was this researcher’s goal to prove or disprove that relationship. After extensive review of both English and New England evidence, the researcher has concluded there is no evidence of ties between John Snelling of Boston and his purported uncle, Dr. William Snelling.

Such a determination relied on areas of research: 1) evidence of English sources as to the fate of John Snelling of Chaddlewood, called John, Jr. in this article, and confirmation of William’s identity; 2) evidence of ties between Boston John and William in their lives in New England; and 3) the overall context of their lives while in New England.

Evidence from English Records

The Snellings of Chaddlewood in Plympton St. Mary, Devon, England, were members of the gentry. The family is listed in Vivian’s *The visitations of the county of Devon: Comprising the herald’s visitations of 1531, 1564, & 1620*.^[2] William, who emigrated to New England in 1647, was the fourth son of Thomas Snelling, owner of Chaddlewood, and youngest brother of John Snelling. John, Sr., and his wife Frances (Hele) Snelling had three sons and five daughters living to adulthood, with John, Jr. being the youngest son. He was baptized 17 January 1624/5, in Plympton St. Mary.^[3]

John, Sr. owned land granted directly from the Crown and upon his death in 1639, an Inquests Post Mortem (IPM) was held by the Crown to determine the value and disposition of his holdings. This hearing held John, Sr.’s to be Francis Snelling, the infant son of the eldest deceased John Sr. The IPM listed

¹ Rev. Samuel Snelling, “An Account of Doctor William Snelling, who came to New England in 1647; also of his nephew John Snelling, who probably accompanied him; with a brief notice of some of the latter’s descendants,” *Register* 52 [1898]:342–346.

² Vivian, J. L. 1895. *The visitations of the county of Devon: Comprising the herald’s visitations of 1531, 1564, & 1620 / With additions by Lieutenant-Colonel J. L. Vivian.* for the author, by H. S. Eland.

³ Plympton St. Mary, baptisms, marriages, burials, 1603–1684, v. 414/1, p. 46 (FHL British Digital 4635060, Image 47 of 319).

John, Sr.' daughters and also recorded that John, Jr. would inherit lands held by his mother, Francis Snelling. After her death John, Jr. was not due to inherit the Chaddlewood estates.

Francis, who died in September 1649 at the age of 3,^[4] and the loss of all higher ranked males would have made John, Jr. heir to his family estates. Instead, the estate passed to his sisters and brothers-in-law. The customary detailed records of this transfer appear not to have survived. Well-established administrative processes such as Inquests Post Mortem, in which the ownership changes of estates were carefully documented, were disrupted by the Civil War being waged in the immediate area.

The next known record pertaining to the ownership of Chaddlewood occurs in 1652 in a Court of Chancery suit brought by John's sisters and their husbands over the division of the estate and payment of marriage portions.^[5] The records state that "Thomas Snelling, John Snelling the father, Sampson Snelling and *John Snelling the son* being all dead and Francis Snelling dying . . . September 1649." Unfortunately, no burial record for John Snelling, Jr. has been found in the surrounding area. There was a John Snelling who died in 1645, but further research is required to ascertain the origins of that individual. It appears that John, Jr. was alive, and called gentleman, when recorded in the Protestation Return of 22 and 24 February 1641,^[6] but deceased at the time of his nephew's death in 1649. If John, Jr. had been around or alive at the time of his nephew's death, he would have inherited the family estates.

The turmoil of the Civil War, and limited financial prospects in England as the youngest son, would be motive for John, Jr. to move to the colonies. It is also possible, however unlikely, that his sisters and mother testified to his death knowing him to be living. The presence of purported uncle William, who was known to stay in touch with his Chaddlewood relatives, makes a full break between the branches of the family even less likely.

In summary, we have testimony given in court by direct family members that John, Jr. was deceased. Even if it were in the family's interest to take the estates while John was in New England, he would have had significant interest in asserting his claim.

Evidence of a relationship between William and Boston John

Boston John Snelling in New England

Boston John is found first in Saco, Maine, by 1655^[7] and in Boston by

⁴ Administration Act Book, The National Archives: Prob 6/24, (and the Visitations records, footnote 2).

⁵ Ibid.

⁶ Protestation Return of 22 and 24 February 1641 (Parliamentary Archives, Ref: HL/PO/JO/10/1/85/13).

⁷ Rev. Snelling's article states that John Snelling was found first at Saco, Maine, where his name appeared in the list of freemen in 1653. This reference was probably taken from John Farmer's 1829 "A *Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New-England*." The "List of freemen, Massachusetts Bay Colony from 1630 to 1691: with freeman's oath, the first paper printed in New England" by H. Franklin Andrews, 1906, does not list John Snelling as a freeman anywhere within

1657.^[8] He appears to be a small trader of fish and foodstuffs along the coast and was involved in a number of disputes. The first case, heard in York County Court, May 1655, involved slander by John of James Harmon.^[9] In June 1656, John was defendant in a case valued at £20. The third and fourth records were cases heard in September 1661. Snelling was again defendant, Thomas Mills, plaintiff, where Snelling was successfully accused of detaining “eight Kintells of fish.” Morgan Howell successfully sued Snelling for not delivering a “parcel of fish” as he was paid to do. The last case was heard in July 1662, Snelling is again defendant for withholding £12 due William Battine.

John Snelling’s trading practices continued to result in court records with a case heard in the Salem Quarterly Court in November 1670. Sued by Mathew Price, John owed a debt to be paid in fish, beef, pork, or boards. Snelling’s last known court appearance was before the Quarterly Courts of Essex County^[10] in September 1671. In his testimony, John gave his age as “forty-three years of thereabouts,” resulting in a birth year of approximately 1628. John, Jr. was baptized in January 1624/25. A three-year difference in possible birth years is not enough evidence to confirm that this or is not John, Jr.

While Boston John plied his trade up and down the New England coast, his wife Sarah was in Boston with a growing family. Their family was comprised of daughters Sarah (1657–1664) and Abigail (1670–), and four sons, John (1663–1700), Joseph (1669–1726), William (1671–), and Benjamin (1672–1729). Sarah, was admitted to the Second Church in Boston in April 1667.^[11]

In September 1672 tragedy hit the family when Boston John died in a fishing accident in Cape Cod Bay. He drowned when a larger vessel ran down the small fishing vessel on which he was a crew member. He died intestate, and administration papers contain only an inventory consisting of household items (including “two old Bibles & other bookes”) valued at £16

Massachusetts Bay Colony. In addition, George Folsom’s 1830 *History of Saco and Biddeford, with notices of other early settlements, and of the proprietary governments, in Maine, including the provinces of New Somersetshire and Lygonia* mentions John Snelling as the subject of slander by James Harmon in 1655 and further states that no other records of John Snelling are found. Rev. Snelling’s article states that John married Sarah Sedgwick. According to *New England Marriages to 1700* (Online database. AmericanAncestors.org), John married Sarah (Last name unknown) by 1657, and perhaps in Saco, Maine. The frequent confusion with Sarah Sedgwick as John’s wife may arise due to Sarah Sedgwick marrying John’s son, Joseph, in 1693. No records found to date have identified Sarah’s surname or parents. [Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby, and Walter Goodwin Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* (Portland, Maine: 1928–39; reprint ed., Baltimore: GPC, 1976), 661, contains a concise sketch of John’s life and family.]

⁸ The first appearance of John Snelling in Boston is from “*Boston, MA Births, Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths, 1630–1699*” with the birth of Sarah Snelling, daughter of John and Sarah, on 4 October 1657.

⁹ Charles T. Libby, *Province and Court Records of Maine, Vols. 1 and 2* (Portland, Maine: Maine Historical Society, 1931), 48, 116, 372–373.

¹⁰ *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts* (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1914), 4:324.

¹¹ “Boston, MA: Church Records, 1630–1895” The Records of the Churches of Boston. CD_ROM. Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2002. (Online database. AmericanAncestors.org. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008.) <https://www.americanancestors.org/DB31/i/7616/180/8707578>.

8s. 6d.^[12] In a case^[13] brought unsuccessfully by his widow, she pled that the financial losses went beyond her husband's life and included the loss of his trade goods and his share of the fish. Sarah testified that these losses would force her, and her children, to rely upon the town for maintenance. Records about the family's means of support have not been found. The town Overseers of the Poor were appointed in 1692, twenty years after John's death. The only document found that pertains to the family after John's death is a register from the Second Church, dated 1675, in which four of the children were listed.^[14] It is noteworthy that Sarah spoke of needing town support instead of seeking support from her husband's purported well-established uncle, as would have been more typical for the times.

Dr. William Snelling in New England

Dr. William Snelling's life in Boston provides evidentiary ties with the Snelling family of Chaddlewood. In Boston, in 1648, William married Margaret Stagg, and was referred to as the fourth son of Thomas Snelling, Esquire, and Johan, his wife.^[15] In 1652, William and his wife signed a deed for property in Newbury whereupon William affixed his Snelling crest seal to the deed.^[16] The crest is the same as of the Devon family.^[17] On 7 May 1674, Dr. William Snelling wrote his will and identified himself as the youngest son of the late Thomas Snelling of Chaddlewood in Plympton St. Mary and again used his Snelling seal to authenticate the document.^[18] The will named his late wife; his only son, William; and his daughter, Ann. Among various bequests, he gave his silver seal to his son. He referred to loving kinsman Mr. Edward Rawson and his wife Rachell Rawson. No mention was made of the widow or children of John Snelling, who had died less than two years earlier.

Just as references to a local nephew are missing from William's documents, references to a well-established uncle are missing from Boston John's. In summary, we find no documentary evidence of a relationship between the two Snellings in Boston. William did not make a bequest of any type to his

¹² Suffolk County Probate, #636.

¹³ *Records of the Suffolk County Court 1671-1680* [Publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts; v. 29-30] (Boston: The Society, 1933), 166.

¹⁴ "Second Church Record Book, 1673-1685." Massachusetts Historical Society Digitized Collections. Massachusetts Historical Society, October 9, 2022. <http://www.masshist.org/collection-guides/digitized/fa0006/v03#4>.

¹⁵ The marriage record provides the following narrative: "William the fourth son of Thomas Snelling Esquire & Johan his wife dwelling at Chaddlewood in Plympton Mary in Devon and Margaret the eldest daughter of Gyles Stagg Gentleman and Anne his wife dwelling Southwarke in Barnaby Street at the sign of the Christopher." *Vital Records of Newbury Massachusetts to the end of the year 1849* (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1911), 2:456.

¹⁶ The original deed, which was never recorded in Essex County, was in the possession of the Rev. Samuel Snelling of Whitmarsh, Penn. in 1898 (*Register*, 52 [1898]:343).

¹⁷ Snelling crest located in the Plympton St. Mary Parish church, 2011.

¹⁸ Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers. Online database. AmericanAncestors.org. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017-2019. (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org) <https://www.americanancestors.org/DB2735/i/48697/704-co1/1416762759>, Case 704.

purported nephew's widow in his will, and Boston John's widow needed support from the town rather from her husband's uncle.

Dissimilar Statuses in New England

Stepping back from the details of wills and estates, and viewing the overall context of the lives of William and Boston John, brings into focus a difference in status. William was a well-educated physician, and Chaddlewood John's brothers were known to have been educated as appropriate for their economic position. In contrast, Boston John fished and traded foodstuffs along the coast. He worked with his hands at a trade while William was of the educated class. It is likely that John, Jr. was also highly educated. William's son, also William, died shortly after his father and left an estate of £316 while Boston John's estate was valued at mere £16. William owned land; Boston John owned none.

The lack of evidence of contact or relationship between the two Snellings undermines the assertion that these two men were related and that Boston John is also John, Jr. Indeed, there is no evidence supporting any sort of relationship. The old family paper cited in Samuel Snelling's article of 1898 has not surfaced with clues.

During this research, leads pointing to Surrey as the origin of Boston John have surfaced. In a family genealogy compiled by Dr. Frederick Greenwood Snelling in 1874, Dr. Snelling provides a one-sentence explanation that Boston John was from Surrey, but that the Surrey Snellings were an older branch of the Devon Snellings. Even a more distant connection between Surrey and Devon Snelling families would not make Boston John the same person as John, Jr. of Chaddlewood. One additional factor pointing to Surrey are the author's DNA matches with a Snelling line of Virginia, which traces its origins to Surrey. Surrey appears to a good target for further investigation.

Marjorie P. Snelling (marjorie.snelling@gmail.com) of Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, is a family historian. She grew up with tales of an ancient estate in England. As she delved into the English connection, she noted "said to be" references and desired to settle the issue. She is indebted to the astute work of Frances Kermer, PhD, in Booker, England, who combed The National Archives for the fate of the Chaddlewood Snellings.

The English Ancestry of Brothers William Fellows of Ipswich, Mass., and Richard Fellows of Hartford, Conn., Springfield, Northampton, and Hadley, Mass.

Clifford L. Stott

The will of widow Elizabeth Morricke of Roxbury, Massachusetts, dated 14 March 1649[/50?], has long provoked speculation about the relationship and origins of three Seventeenth-century New England immigrants mentioned therein — William Fellows of Ipswich, Richard Fellows of Connecticut, and Samuel Fellows of Salisbury.^[1] Although Elizabeth did not mention her relationship to the Fellows family, she provided several useful clues. William, Richard, and Samuel each received £10, “my sister” Grace Allan of Lincolnshire received £5, and Robert Hull of Boston and Leonard Fellows of Great Bowden “in old England” were made executors. Great Bowden is a parish in southern Leicestershire. Robert Hull originated in Market Harborough, a small parish surrounded on three sides by Great Bowden.^[2] The ancestral Fellows family undoubtedly had roots in this area, where the surname is plentiful.

Birth years for William, Richard, and Samuel Fellows can be reasonably estimated from other sources. William appeared as a shoemaker, aged 24, when he embarked on the *Planter* from London to New England in 1635, suggesting a birth year of about 1611. Samuel Fellows of Salisbury deposed at age “about” 61 in Essex County Quarterly Court of 11 November 1679, giving him a birth year of about 1618.^[3]

There is no known record of Richard’s age. Robert Charles Anderson estimated his birth year as “perhaps” about 1621, based on the baptism of his first child in Hartford in 1646.^[4] However, there is strong evidence that Richard had three children prior to 1646 — Richard, Samuel, and Sarah — significantly altering his estimated birth year. As young men, Richard and Samuel Fellows had some difficulties with the law. On 29 March 1670, Richard was presented to the Hampshire County (Mass.) Court with his accomplice Benjamin Allen, charged with “at unreasonable tyme of night . . . coming

¹ Elizabeth Morricke will and inventory, Suffolk County, Massachusetts, probate, N.S., 1:494–95, case 99 [FHL 594,359; DGS 7703883].

² Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration: Immigrants of New England, 1634–1635*, Vol. III G–H (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2003), 460.

³ *Records and files of the Quarterly Courts of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 8 vols. (Salem, Mass.: Essex Institute, 1911–21), 2:279.

⁴ Robert Charles Anderson, George F. Sanborn, Jr., Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration: Immigrants of New England, 1634–1635*, Vol. II C–F (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2001), 509.

into the yard of Thomas Mekins Junr: and abusing his horse by cutting off the haire of his mane.” For this prank, Richard was fined 30 shillings. Samuel Fellows was also fined 30 shillings as an abettor to the crime. Samuel was again presented to the court on 28 March 1671 with Joseph Leonard, a son-in-law of Richard and Ursula Fellows, this time charged with “selling of strong liquors to ye Indians & for buying beaver of the Indians without license.” When Samuel failed to appear in court, Samuel Billing, another son-in-law of Richard Fellows, forfeited his bond.^[5] Samuel’s later history is unknown, but he was almost certainly a son of Richard and Ursula. Richard was killed during King Philip’s war at Sugar-Loaf Hill, about 10 miles north of Hatfield, 25 August 1675. His Hatfield death record identifies him as a son of Richard and Ursula Fellows.^[6]

Richard and Ursula’s daughter Sarah was mentioned in her mother’s will. She was probably born about 1640 and was likely their eldest child. She married first to Samuel Billing at Hadley about 1661^[7] and second to Samuel Belding at Hatfield on 9 October 1678.^[8] The will of widow Ursula Fellows, dated Hatfield 4 September 1688, proved 30 September 1690, mentions her daughter Sarah Belding, son-in-law Samuel Belding, and several Billing grandchildren.^[9] Now assuming that the first child of Richard and Ursula was born near 1640, a more accurate estimate of Richard’s birth is about 1615.

To summarize, the three Fellows immigrants had strong connections to southern Leicester with birth years deduced as follows: William the shoemaker ca. 1611, Richard ca. 1615, and Samuel ca. 1618. They were connected in some way to Elizabeth Morricke, her sister Grace Allan, and a Leonard Fellows, shoemaker of Great Bowden.

In a 1984 article in this journal, Erwin W. Fellows presented the important will of William Fellows of Foxton made in 1630 and suggested that the testator was probably the grandfather of the immigrants based on onomastic evidence and the proximity of Foxton to Great Bowden. But he did not follow up on his hypothesis. Recent research in Leicestershire parish registers and probate records in the vicinity of Great Bowden has discovered a family that closely matches the immigrant family. This family includes William Fellows, a shoemaker and grandson of William Fellows of Foxton. He was christened in the parish of Gumley (near Foxton and Great Bowden) in 1612/3. William had a brother Richard christened in Gumley in 1615, an uncle (or cousin) Leonard Fellows, shoemaker of Great Bowden, and aunts Elizabeth and Grace, presumably Elizabeth Morricke, and Grace

⁵ Hampshire Co. Court and Probate records, 1:115, 123, 128 [FHL 879,184; DGS 7705549].

⁶ “Births, Marriages, and Deaths, [Hampshire] County Court,” entries for Hatfield, p. 110 [FHL 760,648; DGS 4325917]. Entry indicates he was “slain by the Indians” in Aug 1675. The exact date and circumstances of his death are found in original documents published in George M. Bodge, *Soldiers in King Philip’s War* (Boston, 1906; reprint Genealogical Publishing Co.: Baltimore, 1991), 129–30.

⁷ “Births, Marriages, and Deaths, [Hampshire] County Court,” entries for Hadley, p. 70. This undated marriage entry is recorded in a list of Hadley marriages between entries dated in 1661. Their first known child, Samuel, was born 8 January. 1665/6 (Ibid., 40).

⁸ Births, Marriages, and Deaths, [Hampshire] County Court,” entries for Hatfield, Mass., p. 105.

⁹ Hampshire County probate records, 2:64–65 [FHL 879,184; DGS 7705549].

Allan, William and Richard Fellows of Gumley are believed to be the New England immigrants of those names. They had a brother Samuel who was christened in Gumley in 1628, but he was too young to have been Samuel of Salisbury, Massachusetts. The most likely explanation for Samuel is that he was a first cousin of William and Richard, making him yet another nephew of Elizabeth Morricke, who provided each of them with equal portions of £10 in her will. If this analysis is correct, Samuel was another grandson of William Fellows, probably through his sons Richard or Luke, whose families are not fully identified.

Tracing this family is burdened by the loss of pre-1653 parish registers of Foxton, a key parish that borders Gumley and Great Bowden. Fortunately, part of the gap is filled by Foxton bishop's transcripts, which exist for 1563, 1583/4, 1604, 1606–09, 1612–13, 1617–18, 1621–22, 1626–28, 1630, 1632–25, 1636–38.^[10] It should be understood that the surnames Fellow and Fellows were used interchangeably in English records, with a pronounced bias for Fellow in the earliest records, especially in Foxton. The name settled as Fellows and Fellowes in American records during the first generation. In the following summary, the Fellows orthography is consistently used except in direct quotations.

Genealogical Summary

1. THOMAS^C FELLOWS of Foxton, Leicestershire, was born say 1516. He was buried in Foxton on 9 August 1564. Thomas was probably married more than once. The name of his supposed first wife is not known. He probably married second to **ALICE** _____, who was mentioned in his will. Alice may not have been the mother of all of Thomas's children. Four of the six children named in his will were under age 18, and their later history suggests some of them were well under 18 in 1564. The language of the will, too, suggests that Alice might not be William's mother. Thomas wrote his will on 2 August 1564, and it was proved the following 2 October. The following are excerpts:^[11]

... I Thomas fellowe of foxton being sicke in bodye but god being prayed in p[er]fecte memorye make this my Last will and Testament. . . . In primus I give unto the pore mans box iiij^d Item I give unto Johan my daughter — iiij^h Item I give unto Thomas my sonne at xvij yeres of age iii^l Item I give unto Robert my sonne at age xvij yers of age iii^l and two yewes & two lambes & thes yewes & lambes to be set furthe after my decease to his owne behoste It[em] I jvye unto Edward fellowe my sonne at xvij yeres of age iii^l Item I give unto John fellowe my sonne at xvij yeres of age iij^l Item I will that yf any of my children dye or anye of them come [not?] to the age of xvij yeres that his p[ar]te shall Remaine amongst his other brtherne Item I will th[a]t willm fellow my sone shall occupye w^t alice my wyfe so

¹⁰ Foxton bishop's transcripts [FHL DGS 103432003] are the source of all Foxton christenings, marriages, and burials cited in this article.

¹¹ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, reg. wills, 6:32 [FHL 194,414; DGS 8077858]. Records of this court are held in the Record Office for Leicestershire, Leicester and Rutland. Images of all cited documents from the Archdeaconry Court of Leicester are also available in the record set "Leicestershire Wills and Probate Records, 1500–1939" on findmypast.com.

longe as she & he can agre together & yf they can not agre together willyam my sonne then to p[ar]te halfe w^t my wyfe & to go his way All the rest of my goods moveable and unmoveable unbequethed I give unto alice my wife & willm my sonne whome I make my full executors and I will that Thomas ylyfe to be the sup[er]vysor of th^s my last will and Testament to se me brought to the ground & my detts payd and he to have for his paines
 iij^s iijj^d

The original will of Thomas Fellows was inserted in the register after the registered copy. The two wills are identical in content except that a list of debts on the overleaf of the original will shows that Thomas had a brother Edward “Fello” to whom he owed £5 16s 4d.^[12]

Children of Thomas Fellows and his supposed unknown first wife (order uncertain):

- i. JOAN FELLOWS, b. say 1542.
- 2 ii. WILLIAM^B FELLOWS, b. say 1544.

Children of Thomas Fellows, probably by wife Alice (order uncertain):

- iii. THOMAS FELLOWS, b. say 1552 (rough estimate based on the probable age of his son Robert). He was perhaps the Thomas “Fellow” bur. Foxton, 20 Aug. 1609, but he was possibly living in 1628, when another Thomas executed a will mentioning his living (but unnamed) father, shown on an appended list of debts as Thomas. Thomas was listed as a husbandman of Foxton on his son Robert’s apprenticeship record, cited below.

Child(ren) of Thomas Fellows:

1. *Robert Fellows*, b. say 1582 (based on probable age at apprenticeship); d. before Jan. 1635/6, when his will was proved. He m. *Goodith* _____, who was mentioned in his will. The will allowed Goodith to claim a bedstead “shee brought w[i]th her,” a phrase often applied to the property of a second or later wife. As the son of “Thomas “Fellowes of Foxton, husbandman,” Robert was apprenticed to William Brice of the London Butchers’ Co., 25 Dec. 1596.^[13] “Robert Fellowe thelder” of Foxton wrote his will on 20 Sept. 1634, proved Jan. 1636, naming his wife Goodith, sons Robert and Edward “Fellow” and daughter Elizabeth Pratt and her three children. Robert appointed his cousin Luke “Fellowes” overseer. Robert also provided that his sons suffer Goodith “to syt by their fire & to dresse her meate where they dress theirs,” evoking Robert’s occupation of a butcher.^[14]

¹² Nothing further has been found regarding this Edward unless he is the Edward Fellow buried in St. Giles in the Field, London, 3 February. 1578[/9] (image: ancestry.com).

¹³ “London Apprenticeship Abstracts, 1442–1850,” Robert Fellowes, 1596, findmypast.co.uk.

¹⁴ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, orig. wills, 1636, #41 [FHL 234,165; DGS 8441607].

2. (prob.) *Thomas Fellows*, b. say 1587, bur. Gumley, 7 May 1628.^[15] He m. Oadby, Leics., 5 June 1613, *Elizabeth Cartwright*.^[16] The will of Thomas “Fellow” of Gumley, husbandman, dated 6 May 1628, proved 3 Oct. 1628, mentions his unnamed father (referred to as Thomas on an appended list of debts), children Thomas and Agnes (both under 21), his unnamed sister’s three children, and wife Elizabeth.^[17] Elizabeth was bur. Gumley, 20 Aug. 1634. Her brother-in-law William Fellows of St. Martin Vintry, London was appointed administrator of her estate, 27 June 1635.^[18]
 3. (prob.) *William Fellows*, a woodmonger of St. Martin Vintry, London, was appointed to administer the estate of his sister-in-law widow Elizabeth Fellows of Gumley in 1635. There is evidence of William in St. Martin Vintry parish registers as early as 1625.^[19] He or perhaps a son was doubtless the William “Fellowes” of St. Martin Vintry who died in Virginia with administration to his son William Fellows Jr., 15 Apr. 1682.^[20]
- iv. ROBERT FELLOWS, b. say 1563 (rough estimate based on the probable age of his son William). He was a husbandman of Foxton on son’s apprenticeship record, below.

Children of Robert Fellows:

1. *William Fellows*, b. say 1592 (based on probable age at apprenticeship). As a son of Robert “Fellowe,” husbandman of Foxton, William was apprenticed in London to his cousin Robert Fellowe, butcher, 24 June 1607.^[21]
2. (prob.) *Robert Fellows*, b. say 1594 (based on probable age at marriage); m. Foxton, 20 Nov. 1618, *Joan Chapman*. She was named as a sister in the will of Richard Chapman, weaver, of Kibworth Harcourt, Leics., dated 1653 (incomplete date), proved 14 June 1654. Joan and her son Robert were Chapman’s residuary legatees. The will mentions several Fellows relatives.^[22] Joane “Fellowes,” widow, was bur. in Kibworth Beauchamp, 16 Feb. 1665/6.^[23]

¹⁵ Gumley parish register [FHL DGS 101839930]. Parish registers exist for 1594–1630 with a subsequent gap to 1684. Gumley christenings and burials, 1631–1683, cited in this article were derived from bishops’s transcripts [FHL DGS 103472673]. Images of Gumley PRs and BTs are also available on findmypast.co.uk.

¹⁶ Oadby parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk).

¹⁷ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, reg. wills, 1628, 1630–1631, fo. 62 [FHL DGS 102548859].

¹⁸ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, administrations, 1635–1645 [FHL DGS 102756853].

¹⁹ St. Martin Vintry, London parish register (images: findmypast.co.uk).

²⁰ Peter Wilson Coldham, *American Wills & Administrations in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1610–1857* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1989), 107. The original administration was registered in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, The National Archives, Administration Act Book, PROB 6/57 f. 50.

²¹ “London Apprenticeship Abstracts, 1442–1850,” William Fellowe, 1596, findmypast.co.uk.

²² Prerogative Court of Canterbury, reg. wills., The National Archives, PROB 11/234/333 (image: ancestry.com).

²³ Kibworth Beauchamp parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk).

v. EDWARD FELLOWS, b. 1546–1564 (under 18 in 1564).

vi. JOHN FELLOWS, b. 1546–1564 (under 18 in 1564).

2. **WILLIAM^B FELLOWS** (*Thomas^C*) of Foxton was born say 1544 and was buried there on 17 August 1630. He was the only son of Thomas not described as under 18 years old in his father's 1564 will, of which he was named executor. The name of his wife is unknown. William's own will was executed at Foxton on 19 March 16[29]/30 and proved on 19 October 1630. The following is the salient portion:^[24]

... I bequethe my bodie to be buried within the church yearde of Foxon
 first I give my dafter margrett all the furnitude for toow bedes with the
 bedstedes and also one kowe one pot of brase one barill one toule[?]
 one pale one cheare toow weeles one reele one candelstike one cubbord
 one litill pane [pan]

Item I five to Thomas Chapman one kowe and to his wyfe one bord clothe

Item I give to my dafter eles [Alice] one towle

Item I give to my dafter grace one sheete

Item I give to my dafter elizabeth one sheete

Item I give to Annis Fellow the dafter of Thomas Fellow one puter Flagin

Item I give to katheryne Fellow one candilstike

Item I give to Ainis [Annis] Fellow one towele

Item I give to my sonne willyames toowe dafters toow of the beast peces
 of pewter

Item I give to my sonne Rychard children xxs

Item I give to my sonne John one oulde rode of pease of goldinges wringe
 and rode of beane land one thirtifall of mill furlong and if I live till I sowe
 my barlie I will give him one halfe aker of barlie

Item I give to marie Fello the dafter of John Fellow one ewe and a lame and
 one towele

Item I give to william Fellow the son of willyam Fellow iis

— I give Leonard toow strike of malt

Item I do make my sonne luke my full executor of all the rest of my goodes
 to bring my bodie to the gronde and all other charges whatsoever. . . .

Witnesses to the will were John, William, and Thomas “Fellow,” apparently his sons. The terms of the will suggest he was a husbandman or yeoman farmer. With several grandchildren mentioned, he was clearly not a young man in 1630. William's children named in the will were Margaret, Alice, Grace, Elizabeth, Richard, John, William, and Luke. Others mentioned in the will without stating relationships were Thomas, Leonard, Katherine, and Annis Fellows, and the unnamed wife of Thomas Chapman, whose marriage to Marie “Fellow” occurred in Foxton on 22 October 1621. Thomas Fellows's will, quoted

²⁴ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, reg. wills, 34:87 [FHL 194,422; DGS 8409870].

below, confirms that he was in fact William's son. But Leonard's relationship remains unsettled. Similarly, Katherine and Annis may be granddaughters of William Sr. Thomas had a daughter Agnes (Annis) christened in Foxton on 16 November 1618; Luke had a daughter Katherine christened there on 29 September 1613.

Children of William Fellows named in his will (order uncertain):

- i. WILLIAM FELLOWS, b. say 1575; d. at Laughton, Leics., 1635, as shown by his will. William's two unnamed daughters and a son William were mentioned in the will of their grandfather William Fellows in 1630. The will of William "Fellow" of Laughton written 7 June 1635, proved 18 Nov. 1635, mentions no wife but identifies, among others, two daughters and a son William, matching the clues in his father's will. The witnesses included Luke Fellows [his brother] and Thomas Chapman [his son-in-law].^[25]

Children of William Fellows, all but Elizabeth mentioned in their father's will (order uncertain):

1. *Mary Fellows*, b. ca. 1600, apparently one of the two unnamed daughters of William mentioned in the will of her grandfather in 1630. She m. Foxton, 22 Oct. 1621, *Thomas Chapman*, one of the witnesses to her father's will.
 2. *Agnes Fellows*, apparently one of the two unnamed daughters of William mentioned in the will of her grandfather in 1630.
 3. *Edward Fellows*, possibly the Edward Fellowe "of Leicestershire" who matriculated from Queens College, Cambridge, in 1615, B.A. 1618–19, M.A. 1622, rector of St. Alphage, Kent, 1661–63 and bur. there 18 May 1663.^[26]
 4. *Henry Fellows*, bp. Laughton 21 Apr. 1606.
 5. *William Fellows*, mentioned in the will of his grandfather in 1630.
 6. *Joseph Fellows*, b. say 1610. He was a husbandman. With his wife *Mary* _____, they had a dau. Anne bp. Laughton, 30 Apr. 1637.
 7. *Isaac Fellows*, bp. Laughton 31 Oct 1613.
 8. *Elizabeth Fellows*, bur. Laughton, 27 Sept. 1625, "daughter of William Fellow."
- ii. THOMAS FELLOWS, b. say 1582; bur. Foxton 26 June 1630. He m. (1) by license, 1609 (date incomplete), ALICE CHAPMAN;^[27] (2) GRACE _____, who was mentioned in his will. Thomas "Fellow" of Foxton, husbandman, executed his will on 15 July 1630, proved the following 8 Sept. The following are excerpts:^[28]

²⁵ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, orig. wills, 1635, #137 [FHL 234,165; DGS 844160].

²⁶ John Venn and J. A. Venn, *Alumni Cantabrigienses, Part I (From the Earliest Times to 1751)*, 4 vols. (Cambridge: University Press, 1922–27), 2:128.

²⁷ Henry Hartopp, ed., *Leicestershire Marriage Licences . . . 1570–1729*, vol. 38 of *The Index Library* (London: British Record Society, 1910), 146.

²⁸ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, reg. wills, 1628, 1630–1631, fo. 441 [FHL DGS 102548859].

. . . my wife Grace Fellow shall have & enjoye dureing her widdowhod and atterr the decease of Willia[m] my father three roodes of arable land. . . . I given unto Willia[m] Fellow my youngest sonne Five pounds to be paide out of my lands tenements & hereditaments by my sonne Thomas Fellow his heires of assigns w[th]in three years after the decease of his grandfather William Fellow and I give further unto my sonne Willm Fellow my sonne . . . one little house and yards now in the tenure and occupation of George Gray and one cow pasture sometimes belonging unto a cottage . . . after the decease of his mother or after her widdowhod Item in consideration of Thomas Fellow my eldest son . . . shall pay & discharge all my debts . . . and allso pay or cause to be paide unto Willia[m] Fellow my youngest sonne the said somme of Five pounds as is before expressed I give and bequeath unto the said Thomas Fellow my eldest sonne all the rest of my lands tenements and hereditaments v lving & being in Foxton & great Bouden. . . .

The will was witnessed by two of Thomas's brothers, William and John. It is clear that William, the youngest son, was the son of Grace, who was called his mother. Chronologically, Thomas, the elder son, was almost certainly from his father's first marriage.

Children of Thomas and Alice (Chapman) Fellows:

1. *Thomas Fellows*, b. ca. 1610; bur. Gumley, 29 Dec. 1633. He m. Foxton, 1630/1, *Elizabeth Chapman*.
2. *Elizabeth Fellows*, b. Foxton, 4 Oct. 1612; bur. there 17 Dec 1612.

Children of Thomas and Grace (____) Fellows:

3. *William Fellows*, b. say 1616; d. Gumley, 1653–54, as shown by his will. He was a husbandman of Gumley when he m. Willoughby Waterless, Leics., 13 Feb 1643/4, *Anne Willy*, dau. of Thomas Willy.^[29] William "Fellowes" of Gumley executed his will 30 Jan. 1653[/4?], proved 4 July 1654, naming a minor son Luke and daughters Liddia and Hannah. The will fails to mention his wife Anne, but she was granted administration on 4 July 1654 during the minority of her son Luke, whom William named executor. William appointed his cousin James Fellows and Richard Chapman of Kibworth Harcourt to be overseers of the will.^[30] The three children of William Fellows were mentioned, but not named, in Richard Chapman's will made the same year.^[31]
4. *Agnes Fellows*, bp. Foxton, 16 Nov. 1618; prob d. before 1630.^[32]

iii. GRACE FELLOWS, m. _____ ALLAN and was living in Lincolnshire in 1649.

²⁹ Willoughby Waterless parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk).

³⁰ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, reg. wills, The National Archives, PROB 11/234/413 (image: ancestry.com).

³¹ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, reg. wills., The National Archives, PROB 11/234/333 (image: ancestry.com).

³² There are no extant bishop's transcripts for 1619 or 1620.

- iv. ELIZABETH FELLOWS, settled in Hingham and Roxbury, Mass.; d. Roxbury, 25 Aug. 1650.^[33] She m. JOHN MORRICKE. "Elizabeth Moricke [*sic*] widow of Jn^o Morricke deceased of Hingham But now Dwelling in Roxbery" made her will on 14 March 1649[/50?], and it was proved 5 Sept. 1650.^[34]
- v. RICHARD FELLOWS, the father of unnamed children mentioned in the will of their grandfather in 1630.
- vi. MARGARET FELLOWS, bp. Foxton, 30 May 1584; living unmarried 19 March 16[29]/30 (from father's will).
- 3 vii. JOHN^A FELLOWS, b. say 1586.
- viii. LUKE FELLOWS, b. say 1588 (based on probable age at marriage); m. Foxton, 30 April 1612, AGNES CRANE. She was bur. Foxton, 1 Aug. 1638.

Only known child of Luke and Agnes (Crane) Fellows; others possible:

1. *Katherine Fellows*, bp. Foxton, 29 Sept. 1613; bur. there 21 May 1636. She was possibly the Katherine Fellows mentioned in William Fellows's will in 1630.
- ix. ALICE FELLOWS, b. say 1592 (based on probable age at marriage); m. Foxton, 13 Nov. 1613, JOHN COLMAN.
- x. (prob.) LEONARD FELLOWS, b. say 1598 (based on probable age at marriage), named without relationship in the will of William Fellows of Foxton, 1630;^[35] bur. Great Bowden, 4 Apr. 1654.^[36] He m. Aylestone, Leics., 3 Nov. 1624, JANE MORBEY.^[37] Leonard Fellows of Great Bowden, shoemaker, was joint executor with Robert Hull of the will of Elizabeth Morricke of Roxbury, Mass., in 1649/50.

Children of Leonard and Jane (Morbey) Fellows, all but child no. 5 were bp. in Great Bowden:

1. *Nathaniel Fellows*, bp. 30 April 1626; bur. Great Bowden 27 Nov. 1673. He m. (1) Great Bowden, 12 Oct. 1644, *Mary Darlo*. She was bur. there 2 Feb. 1658/9. He m. (2) Great Bowden, 8 Feb. 1659/60, *Elizabeth Hill* of Lubenham. He was a shoemaker.
2. *Samuel Fellows*, bp. 15 March 1628/9; bur. 23 July 1629.
3. *Anice Fellows*, bp. 8 Aug. 1630.
4. *Elizabeth Fellows*, bp. 4 Aug. 1633; m. Great Bowden, 3 Nov. 1662, *Robert Homan*, butcher.

³³ *Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts, to the End of the Year 1849*, 2 vols. (Salem: Mass.: Essex Institute, 1925, 1926), 2:595.

³⁴ Suffolk Co., Mass. probate, N.S., 1:494–95 [FHL 594,359; DGS 7703883]; *Suffolk County Wills. Abstracts of the Earliest Wills Upon Record in the County of Suffolk, Massachusetts. From The New England Historical and Genealogical Register. With an Index by Judith McGhan* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1984), 105–106.

³⁵ Leonard could possibly be a grandson of William Fellows through his son Richard. Nothing is known of Richard's age or family except that he was a father in 1630. William's other sons can be tentatively disqualified.

³⁶ Great Bowden parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk). All references to Great Bowden christenings, marriages, and burials herein cited were derived from this source.

³⁷ Aylestone parish register, Record Office for Leicestershire, Leicester & Rutland, DE3437/1 (image: findmypast.co.uk).

5. *Matthias Fellows*, bp. Aylestone, 28 Feb. 1635/6, “the sonne of Leonard and Jane Fellowes of Ailston towne.”^[38]
6. *Mary Fellows*, bp. 24 March 1638/9, her father called shoemaker.
7. *Rebecca Fellows*, bp. 26 Dec. 1641.

3. **JOHN^A FELLOWS** (*William^B, Thomas^C*) of Foxton and Gumley was born say 1586. He was buried in Gumley on 24 April 1634. John married **ALICE** _____, who renounced administration of his estate on 24 July 1634.^[39] John’s creditors briefly administered the estate until it devolved upon his son William Fellows, the shoemaker, on 13 August 1634.^[40] John’s estate inventory, taken the same day, suggests he was a relatively poor man. His few possessions were valued at a mere £16 1s 2d. John probably derived his income from a “halfe yard land Crop of Barly & pease rented of Mr Glover of Laughton Minister.”^[41]

Children of John Fellows:

- i. **RICHARD FELLOWS**, bp. Foxton, 28 June 1609; bur. there 7 Aug. 1609.
- ii. **THOMAS FELLOWS**, bp. Kibworth Beauchamp, Leics., 8 Nov. 1610.^[42] He was possibly the Thomas Fellow, farmer, who had a wife Elizabeth and children chr. in Foxton in 1633 and 1638.
- iii. **WILLIAM^I FELLOWS**, bp. Gumley 14 Feb. 1612/3; d. Ipswich, Mass., between 29 Dec. and 21 Dec. 1676. He m. ca. 1637 **MARY** _____.^[43] William was a shoemaker when appointed to administer his father’s estate on 13 Aug. 1634, and was listed as a 24-year-old shoemaker when he enrolled for passage to New England on the *Planter* in 1635.^[44]
- iv. **RICHARD^I FELLOWS**, bp. Gumley, 22 Oct. 1615; d. Hadley, Mass. before 10 Sept. 1663, when his estate was inventoried.^[45] He m. ca. 1639, **URSULA** _____. Richard settled in Hartford, moving up the valley to Springfield, Northampton, and finally Hadley, Mass., working as a trader.^[46]
- v. **ABIGAIL FELLOWS**, bp. Gumley, 15 Mar. 1617/8; m. prob. Great Bowden, 12 Oct. 1644, **THOMAS HARPER**. Abigail Harper and her children were

³⁸ Aylestone parish register.

³⁹ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, Administration Act Book, 1604–1634, 24 July 1634 [FHL J102756852].

⁴⁰ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, Administrations, 1634, John Fellows, folios 55 and 56 [FHL 288,893; DGS 8442161].

⁴¹ Archdeaconry Court of Leicester, inventories, 1634, PR/I/36 #259 [FHL DGS 102370360].

⁴² Kibworth Beauchamp parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk).

⁴³ Anderson, *Great Migration: 1634–1635*, [note 2], 3:510. William’s original will and inventory are in Essex County probate file #9367 [FHL DGS 4481792; images will 76, 78, 163].

⁴⁴ For further information about William’s American history, see Anderson, *Great Migration: 1634–1635*, [note 4] 2:507–12; Louis Dow Scisco, *Fellows, Fallows, Fellow and Like Names* (New York: Tobias A. Wright, 1926), 12–14, 21–22.

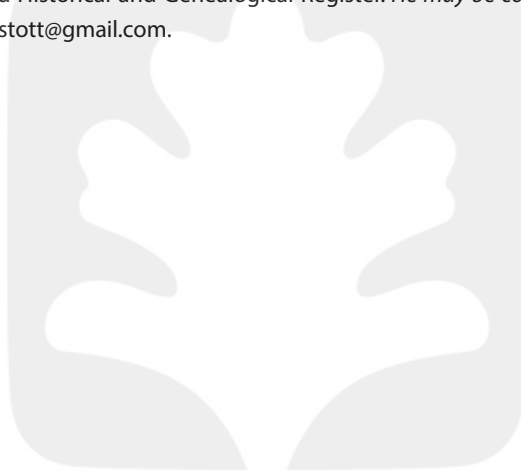
⁴⁵ Hampshire Co. probate records, 1:28, 32, 42–44 [FHL 879,184; DGS 7705549], including administration, 29 September 1663, inventory 10 September 1663.

⁴⁶ For further information about Richard’s American history, see Scisco, *Fellows, Fallows, Fellow* [note 44], 19–23; Carl Bridenbaugh and Juliette Tomlinson, eds., *The Pynchon Papers*, 2 vols. (Boston: Colonial Society of Massachusetts, 1982, c1982), 2:112, 139, 257 (fn 7), 461.

mentioned in the will of Richard Chapman of Kibworth Harcourt in 1653, proved 14 June 1654.^[47]

- vi. MARY FELLOWS, bp. Gumley, 22 Jan 1619/20. She was given a ewe, a lamb, and a towel in the will of her grandfather William Fellows in 1630.
- vii. ANN FELLOWS, bp. Gumley, 12 May 1623.
- viii. JAMES FELLOWS, bp. Gumley, 23 Jan. 1624/5.
- ix. JONATHAN FELLOWS, bp. Gumley, 20 May 1627; bur. there 8 Feb. 1682/3.
- x. SAMUEL FELLOWS, bp. Gumley, 28 Feb. 1628/9; bur. Gumley, 6 Mar. 1702/3, as a tailor. Samuel was “of Gumbley” when he m. in Market Harborough, Leics., 18 Dec. 1655, JANE MARSHALL of Market Harborough.^[48] She was bur. Gumley, 17 Feb. 1708/9.

Clifford L. Stott, CG, FASG, is a retired professional genealogist specializing in New England families and their English origins. He is a contributing editor to The American Genealogist and a consulting editor of the New England Historical and Genealogical Register. He may be contacted at cliffordstott@gmail.com.



⁴⁷ Prerogative Court of Canterbury, reg. wills., The National Archives, PROB 11/234/333 (image: ancestry.com).

⁴⁸ Market Harborough parish register (image: findmypast.co.uk).

The Family of Henry and Remember Luce of Martha's Vineyard

B. Darrell Jackson

In his history of Martha's Vineyard, Charles Edward Banks observed that Henry Luce was "the ancestor of the largest island family."^[1] Henry may have been the only 17th century resident of the English colonies with that surname who left descendants.^[2] Their large number is a result of Henry and his wife Remember being parents of ten children who reached adulthood, married, and themselves had children.

Henry Luce is found first in the records of Plymouth Colony (Scituate and Rehoboth), but his English origin, subject of a good deal of speculation, is not settled.^[3] He arrived on Martha's Vineyard (Dukes County from 1683 on) in the early 1670s.^[4] In 1673 he was one of the twenty men who signed petitions seeking the freedom of the island from the rule of its proprietors.^[5] He was grantee and grantor on deeds during the 1670s and 1680s.^[6] He was likely deceased by March of 1689 when Remember Luce purchased land in her own name.^[7] That she was the wife of Henry is shown by her identification in a

¹ Charles Edward Banks, *The History of Martha's Vineyard, Dukes County, Massachusetts*, vol. 2, *Town Annals* (Boston: George H. Dean, 1911), *Annals of West Tisbury*, 54. Also, vol. 3, *Family Genealogies* (Edgartown: Dukes County Historical Society, 1966), x, shows that there were more Luce families than any other on Martha's Vineyard in the 1790, 1800, 1810, and 1850 censuses. Hereafter "Banks."

² Standard sources of early residents of New England or the colonies in general list few if any Luces. Robert Charles Anderson, *The Great Migration Directory, Immigrants to New England 1620-1640* (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015) lists no Luce. Coldham, *The Complete Book of Emigrants, 1670-1660*, 399 and 475, lists only Luke Luce, who was a London merchant, not an emigrant. James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England* (Boston: Little & Brown Company; 1861), 3:127, lists Henry Luce of Rehoboth and Thomas Luce of Charlestown; the latter he believes returned to England. (American Ancestors database does not include any information on a Thomas Luce.) Frederick A. Virkus, ed., *The Abridged Compendium of American Genealogy*, 6:790, lists Henry Luce of Martha's Vineyard as the only Luce among immigrant ancestors of the thousands of persons whose ancestry he gives in his multi-volume work (6:749-819).

³ Banks [note 1], 2:55 and 3:247-248. See also, Martha F. McCourt, Thomas R. Luce, Robert L. Massard, and Catherine M. Mayhew, compilers, "The American Descendants of Henry Luce of Martha's Vineyard," 4 volumes (circulated in typescript only, 1994) 1:1-3, 10A-10L. The volumes may be accessed at Familysearch.org, but volume 1 is incomplete at that site. A complete volume 1 can be consulted at archive.org.

⁴ Banks places Henry's arrival on the island as 1671. I am unable to confirm that.

⁵ Charles Edward Banks, *The History of Martha's Vineyard* [note 1], 1:154-158. The petition to the General Court of Massachusetts Bay, dated 15 October 1673, and signed by "Henery Luce," is Massachusetts Archives Collection 106:202-203 [FHL DGS 7,705,898, images 730-731].

⁶ Dukes County, Massachusetts, Deeds 1:303, dated 4 July 1679 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 183]; 4:117, 5 August 1682 and Deeds 3:476, 3 February 1687/[8?] [FHL DGS 7,466,263, images 605 and 262]; 1:307, 17 March 1679/80 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 185].

⁷ Dukes County, Deeds 1:78, 12 March 1688/9 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 51].

1708 deed as the “widow Relict of Henry Luce formerly of Tisbury, but long time deceased.”^[8] No record has been found of the couple’s marriage.^[9]

Remember Luce’s identity is established by three wills probated in Scituate. In 1656 William Dennis named Judith Peakes as his daughter and heir and also named Remember, Dependence, and Experience Litchfield—relationship not specified—as his heirs.^[10] In 1685 Judith Peakes named Dependence Litchfield as her daughter,^[11] so Remember Litchfield was likely also her daughter, and like all three Litchfields, child of Judith’s first marriage to a man with the surname of “Litchfield.”^[12] A few years earlier, William Peakes, second husband of Judith, named Dependence Litchfield as his “daughter-in-law,” that is, as his step daughter, and also named Experience Luce and Remember Luce as his grandchildren.^[13] They were his step-grandchildren. Henry and Remember Luce had children named Experience and Remember, so Remember Luce, their mother, was the Remember Litchfield of the William Dennis will and the mother of the grandchildren named in the William Peakes will.

Banks listed the following as the sons and daughter of Henry and Remember Luce.^[14] He placed the years of birth in parentheses, except for the birth date of Experience, apparently as an indication that they were estimates. His numbers for the children are used.

2. Robert Luce, b. 1667.
3. Remember Luce, b. 1669; m. Samuel Merry.
4. Israel Luce, b. 1671.
5. Experience Luce, b. 7 Feb. 1673.
6. Eleazer Luce, b. 1675.
7. Henry Luce, b. 1677.
8. Thomas Luce, b. 1679.
9. William Luce, b. 1681.
10. David Luce, b. 1683.
11. Josiah Luce, b. 1685.

Commenting on the sources of his genealogical information, Banks lamented the absence of early town and church records on Martha’s Vineyard. Indeed, no town or church vital record has been found that states the parents of any of the ten children listed by Banks. He noted that probate records before 1700 are also scarce there. He recognized, on the other hand, that deeds are

⁸ Dukes County, Deeds 2:294–295, 8 November 1708 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 406–407].

⁹ Clarence Almon Torrey, *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*, 3 vols., (Boston: NEHGS, 2011), 975, lists their marriage, but without a date.

¹⁰ Plymouth County, Massachusetts, Wills 2:35 [FHL DGS 7,051,111, image 169]. The will is transcribed by Gerald James Parsons, “The Will of William Dennis of Scituate, Mass.,” *The American Genealogist* 33 (1957), 154. The surname is spelled “Leichfeild” in the will. It was eventually standardized as “Litchfield.”

¹¹ Plymouth County, Wills, Book 4, part 2, 150–151 [FHL DGS 7,051,111, image 612].

¹² He was Lawrence Litchfield according to Wilford S. Litchfield, *The Litchfield Family in America*, Part One, No. 1 (1901), 1–13. [A better source is *The American Genealogist* 33 (1957):155].

¹³ Plymouth County, Wills, Book 4, part 2, 40–42 [FHL DGS 7,051,111, image 558].

¹⁴ Banks [note 1], 3:249. Volume 3 was published in 1966, but the work was done much earlier, since Banks died in 1935.

complete from 1647. Also, genealogical papers from the late 18th and early 19th century were available to him.^[15] Unfortunately, Banks did not indicate the specific sources of his information, now recognized as a necessary feature of reliable genealogy.

A recent massive compilation of the descendants of Henry and Remember Luce includes more information than Banks, but is weak on documentation, relies heavily on authored sources (including Banks), and does not consider the basic genealogical question: what is the evidence that these are the children of Henry and Remember Luce.^[16] The purpose of this article is to assemble and analyze that evidence.

For each of the children named by Banks, the following is considered:

- (1) the evidence for their presence on Martha's Vineyard; and
- (2) the evidence that they were the children of Henry and Remember Luce.

The Evidence

Robert Luce

There are no records of the marriage or death of Robert Luce. Robert's presence on Martha's Vineyard is shown by his purchase of land in Tisbury in 1711.^[17] He was dead by 27 April 1714 when his eldest son Henry was named administrator of his estate, his widow Desire Luce having declined.^[18] Banks says that Robert died by drowning on a trip from Tisbury to Nantucket "according to tradition."^[19]

In 1720 the children of Robert Luce agreed among themselves to give Robert's house and land to son Jonathan in return for Jonathan caring for their mother.^[20] Those children were Henry, Samuel, Judy (Dunham), Desire, Mary, Mercy, and Jonathan Luce. Two of those names are suggestive of a connection to the family of Henry and Remember Luce: "Henry," the name of the eldest son, could have been after Robert's father; "Judy," probably the name of the eldest daughter, could have been after Robert's grandmother, Remember's mother, Judith (Dennis) (Litchfield) Pease.

Remember Luce

There is no record of the marriage of Remember Luce to Samuel Merry. Samuel's 1727 will refers, however, to "Remember my Dearly Beloved wife."^[21] Gravestones in West Tisbury Village Cemetery record the burials of Samuel Merrey and "Mrs. Remember Merrey Wife to Mr. Samuall Merrey Who Died

¹⁵ *Ibid.*, 3:iii–vi.

¹⁶ McCourt et al., "The American Descendants of Henry Luce of Martha's Vineyard" [note 3], 1: 16–24.

¹⁷ Dukes, County, Deeds 3:182, dated 17 October 1711 [FHL DGS 7,466,263, image 105]. The dates given in Dukes County deeds apparently are of execution and not recording.

¹⁸ Dukes County, Massachusetts, Probate Records 1:39. [FHL DGS 7,705,438/image 32].

¹⁹ Banks [note 1], 3:249.

²⁰ Dukes County, Probate Records 1:136–137, 25 May 1720 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, image 82].

²¹ *Ibid.*, 2:31 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, image 112].

Jan^y 31 Anno Domⁱ 1739 Aged 69 Years.”^[22] The inscription gives an estimated year of birth for Remember (Luce) Merrey of about 1671, two years later than Banks’s estimate.

The only alleged daughter of Henry and Remember Luce bears the same name as the latter. She was likely the Remember Luce who William Pease, second husband of Judith (Dennis) (Litchfield) Peakes, named as one of his step-grandchildren.

Israel Luce

Israel Luce married Grace Baker in Barnstable on 16 December 1701.^[23] He was a party to several land transactions in Tisbury between 1697 and 1708.^[24] The next year Israel and his wife moved to Windham in the Colony of Connecticut,^[25] where he was recorded as a member of the Congregational Church in 1720 and his death was recorded 20 May 1727.^[26]

Israel is the only supposed child of Henry and Remember Luce whose parentage is directly stated by records. On 12 March 1697/8 he sold land “with the Consent of *my mother Remember Luce* widow.”^[27] On 8 October 1708, “Remember Luce of Tisbury in Dukes County in the province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England” sold land to her “*well beloved son Israel Luce* of the Town afsd.”^[28] And on 20 June 1708, Israel Luce sold a parcel of land described as “all the right title and interest which *my father Henry Luce* late of Tisbury but now deceased was in his life time possessed.”^[29] Remember Luce also signed the latter deed with her mark.

Experience Luce

There is no record of the marriage of Experience Luce. The will of Experience Luce was proved 1 February 1747. The inscription on his gravestone in the West Tisbury Village Cemetery gives the date of death of “Dea[con] Experience Luce” as 2 January 1747, in his 74th year.^[30] This gives 1674 (or 1675, if the year was 1747/8) as his estimated year of birth, a little later than Banks’s date. No source has been located giving the exact date Banks gives for the birth of Experience.

²² Photographs of the two headstones are at www.history.vineyard.net/cemetery/wt/wt46.htm; and wt/wt47.htm and also at FindAGrave.com, memorials #5846688, 5846681.

²³ Barnstable, Barnstable County, Massachusetts, Transcript of Town Records, 1643–1714, 1:385 [Massachusetts, U.S., Town and Vital Records, 1620–1988, Barnstable, Ancestry.com].

²⁴ Dukes County, Deeds 1:160, 1:226, 1:232, 2:38, 2:113, 2:139, 2:145, 2:186, and 3:21.

²⁵ Their daughter Ann was born there in 1709. See the Genealogical Summary for Israel, below.

²⁶ Connecticut Church Records, Windham Congregational Church (Connecticut State Library, 1939), 74; Carole Magnuson, comp., *The Barbour Collection of Connecticut Town Vital Records, Windham, 1692–1850* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 2002), 234.

²⁷ Dukes County, Deeds 1:226 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 143].

²⁸ *Ibid.*, 2:263, [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 391].

²⁹ *Ibid.*, 3:21 [FHL DGS 7,466,263, image 19].

³⁰ *Vital Records of Tisbury, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1910), 223, based on gravestone record, Village Cemetery, West Tisbury. Photograph of the headstone is at www.history.vineyard.net/wt/wt45.htm and at www.findagrave.com/memorial/5846265/experience-luce.

Experience Luce was very active in Tisbury land transactions, starting in 1693 and extending to 1731 and beyond.^[31] One deed establishes his parentage by inference. On 19 July 1705, Israel Luce, known to be the son of Henry and Remember Luce, as shown above, sold land to “my Brother Experience Luce.”^[32] The brother of a son of Henry and Remember was also a son of Henry and Remember.

Like his sister Remember, Experience Luce was named as one of the step-grandchildren of William Peakes, second husband of Judith (Dennis) (Litchfield) Peakes.

Also, Experience Luce had the same given name as Remember (Litchfield) Luce’s brother, Experience Litchfield, one of the three Litchfield children named in the William Dennis will.

Eleazer Luce

Eleazar Luce left few records in Martha’s Vineyard. He is said to have moved to Southold on Long Island, and there are records of an Eleazer Luce in that location, including his death on 3 November 1740.^[33]

His name does appear as a witness on two Vineyard deeds, both on 12 March 1697/8, when he witnessed land-exchange deeds between Israel Luce and Simon Athearn, both of which deeds were also witnessed by Remember Luce, Israel’s mother.^[34] This is a clear association of Eleazer Luce with a brother known to be the son of Henry and Remember Luce and with Remember Luce herself.

Henry Luce

There are no records of Henry Luce’s marriage or death. He executed a will on 6 March 1737/8, which was probated 29 February 1743/4.^[35]

Henry’s presence on Martha’s Vineyard is shown by transactions he executed in Edgartown, the town on the east part of the island, where he bought and sold land from 1727 to 1740.^[36]

Henry bore the same name as the first Henry Luce, husband of Remember. He also named one of his sons Henry, known in records as Henry “Junior.”^[37]

Thomas Luce

There are no records of the marriage or death of Thomas Luce. On 7 July 1727 the Probate Court of Wills in Dukes County granted administration to Experience Luce of the estate of “your Brother Thomas Luce Late of

³¹ Dukes County, Deeds 2:121, 22:124, 2:155, 2:258, 3:19, 3:113, 3:130, 3:143, 3:177, 3:362, 5:259, and others.

³² *Ibid.*, 2:139 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 327].

³³ See below, notes 78–82.

³⁴ Dukes County, Deeds 1:226 and 1:232 [note 27 and FHL DGS 7,466,264, images 143 and 147]. His name is spelled “Elezer” in both records.

³⁵ Dukes County, Probate Records 3:166–167 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, images 521–522].

³⁶ Dukes County, Deeds 4:183, 3:187, 6:112, 6:316, and 9 5:83. Transactions during the same period in Chilmark by Henry Luce, are by the son of Robert Luce.

³⁷ *Ibid.*, 9:583, for example.

Tisbury.^[38] Since Experience was by inference a son of Henry and Remember Luce, Thomas—as the brother of Experience—was also their son.

Also, a deed is basis for inferring the parentage of Thomas. On 4 February 1701/2, Israel Luce, the son of Henry and Remember Luce, sold land to “my Brother Thomas Luce.”^[39] Again, the brother of a son is also a son.

William Luce

There are no records of the marriage or death of William Luce. William was a party to several land transactions on Martha’s Vineyard from 1704 to 1713.^[40] He wrote a will that was probated on 7 May 1734, naming his wife Ann as executor.^[41] Among his heirs he listed a daughter named Remember.

A deed establishes his parentage by inference. On 20 May 1704, Israel Luce, the son of Henry and Remember Luce, deeded land to “my brother William Luce.”^[42]

David Luce

David Luce married Elizabeth Pease in Tisbury on 9 December 1707.^[43] David was a party to land transactions on Martha’s Vineyard between 1704 and 1721.^[44] In one of those deeds “Remember Luce widow Relict of henry Luce” consented to the sale of land by David.^[45] He left Martha’s Vineyard for Windham, Connecticut, where he executed a will in 1751 that was probated there on 24 June 1752.^[46] His gravestone gives his date of death as 15 May 1752 and that he was in his 70th year.^[47] This gives 1683 as his estimated birth year, the same year given by Banks.

In a deed executed by Israel Luce on 20 March 1704/5, before David left the Vineyard, Israel “for the love good will and affection which I bear unto my brother David Luce” gave 30 acres to David.^[48] Again the inference of parentage applies.

Josiah Luce

No record has been found pertaining to Josiah Luce in Martha’s Vineyard. He apparently left for Connecticut when he was relatively young. Josiah and his

³⁸ Dukes County, Probate Records 2:24–25 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, image 109].

³⁹ Dukes County, Deeds 1:160 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 105].

⁴⁰ *Ibid.*, 2:38, 3:85, 4:83, 4:121, and 4:122.

⁴¹ Dukes County, Probate Records 3:18–19 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, images 160–161].

⁴² Dukes County, Deeds 2:38 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 275].

⁴³ Tisbury, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1683–1838, unnumbered page [FHL DGS 7,009,759, image 17]. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 153. There is also a transcription of the original vital records [FHL IGN 7,009,758].

⁴⁴ Dukes County, Deeds 2:186, 2:279, 2:294, 3:302, and 3:446.

⁴⁵ *Ibid.*, 2:294–295, 8 November 1708 [note 8].

⁴⁶ Windham County, Connecticut, Probate Records 4:323–325 [FHL DGS 7,626,149, images 495–496].

⁴⁷ Old Scotland Cemetery North, Scotland, Windham County, Connecticut, David Luce [www.findagrave.com/memorial/54943190/david-luce].

⁴⁸ Dukes County, Deeds 2:186 [FHL DGS 7,466,264, image 350].

wife Sarah were in Windham by 1705 when a daughter was born to them.^[49] His estate was inventoried at Windham on 31 March 1749/50.^[50] Four years later the likely heirs of Josiah's estate—Jonathan, Ebenezer, Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, Mary, and Joshua—signed a statement acknowledging receipt of six pounds each as their portion of the estate.^[51]

There is an association with Henry and Remember's family. Like Israel and David, known sons of the couple, Josiah moved to Windham.

Summation

There is evidence from deeds, probate records, and burials that all of the alleged children of Henry and Remember Luce, except Josiah, were on Martha's Vineyard.

The evidence that they were the children of Henry and Remember is that:

2. Robert named a son Henry, his apparent father's name, and a daughter Judy, his apparent grandmother's name;
3. Remember bore the name of her apparent mother.
4. Israel was identified in deeds as the son of Henry and Remember.
5. Experience was identified in a deed as the brother of Israel, and thus the son of Henry and Remember. He also bore the given name of Experience Litchfield, brother of his apparent mother.
6. Eleazer was a witness to deeds by Israel Luce. The deeds were also witnessed by Remember.
7. Henry Luce bore the name of his apparent father. He also gave that name to a son.
8. Thomas Luce was identified in a deed as the brother of Israel, and thus the son of Henry and Remember. In the appointment of administrator of his estate he was stated to be the brother of Experience Luce.
9. William Luce was identified in a deed as the brother of Israel, and thus the son of Henry and Remember. William named one of his daughters Remember, the name of his apparent mother.
10. David Luce was identified in a deed as the brother of Israel, and thus the son of Henry and Remember. Remember Luce consented to one of David's deeds.
11. Josiah migrated to the same town in the Colony of Connecticut that Israel and David, sons of Henry and Remember, migrated to.

Land records are the best source of information on the parentage of the apparent children of Henry and Remember Luce. Deeds establish that Israel,

⁴⁹ Windham, Windham County, Connecticut, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1:2 [FHL DGS 7,730,726, image 20]. *Barbour Collection, Windham* [note 26], page 234.

⁵⁰ Windham County, Probate Records 3:546 [FHL DGS 7,62,7149, image 300].

⁵¹ *Ibid.*, 3:532 [FHL DGS 7,62,7149, image 292].

Experience, Thomas, William, and David Luce were their sons. Deeds also place Eleazer Luce in association with the family. Information in the deeds should be regarded as reliable. The deeds were created contemporaneously with the events they record. The parties to the deeds would have known who their parents and siblings were. They were not relying on someone else for their information. It is likely, as well, that witnesses with the same surnames as the parties to a deed were related to those parties. Land records establish the parentage of six of the children.

Names they bore and/or gave to their children suggest that Robert, Remember, and Henry were children of Henry and Remember. The naming of Experience is an added connection of that child to his mother's family and the use of "Remember" as a name by William does the same. The repetition of unusual names like "Remember" and "Experience" gives more confidence than the repetition of common names like "Henry" and "Judith." Naming gives evidence for the probable parentage of an additional three children.

The tenth child, Josiah, stands alone with the only evidence of his move to the same location (Windham) as known brothers. His parentage is perhaps less probable than that of the three whose names and naming constitute the evidence.

There is insufficient evidence to confirm the order of birth of the ten children. Ages at death give estimated years of birth for only three of the ten: Remember, born about 1671, Experience, born about 1674, and David, born about 1683. These are consistent with the order, but too few to establish most of it.

Genealogical Summary

1. **HENRY¹ LUCE**, born unknown date, place, and parents; died probably between 3 February 1687 and 12 March 1689 in Tisbury, Dukes County, Plymouth Colony;^[52] married probably in Scituate, Plymouth Colony, **REMEMBER LITCHFIELD**, daughter of Lawrence and Judith (Dennis) Litchfield;^[53] born unknown, and died after 8 November 1708 in Tisbury.^[54]

Children:

- 2 i. **ROBERT² LUCE**.
- 3 ii. **REMEMBER LUCE**, b. about 1671.^[55]
- 4 iii. **ISRAEL LUCE**.
- 5 iv. **EXPERIENCE LUCE**, b. about 1674.^[56]
- 6 v. **ELEAZER LUCE**.
- 7 vi. **HENRY LUCE**.
- 8 vii. **THOMAS LUCE**.

⁵² These are the dates of Henry's latest known land transaction and the date at which Remember Luce purchased land in her own name. Dukes County, Deeds 3:476 and 1:78 [Notes 6 and 7].

⁵³ See evidence of her parentage on pages 1–2 above.

⁵⁴ This is the date of the last record of Remember Luce, Deeds 2:294 [note 8].

⁵⁵ Estimated from her age at her death, see below on Remember.

⁵⁶ Estimated from his age at his death, see below on Experience.

- 9 viii. WILLIAM LUCE.
 10 ix. DAVID LUCE, b. about 1683.^[57]
 11 x. JOSIAH LUCE.

2. ROBERT² LUCE, born unknown date and place, probably son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died between 11 October 1711 and 27 April 1714;^[58] married, unknown date and place to **DESIRE** _____, born unknown, died after 22 November 1722.^[59]

Children:^[60]

- i. HENRY³ LUCE.
- ii. SAMUEL LUCE.
- iii. JUDY LUCE; m. JONATHAN DUNHAM.
- iv. DESIRE LUCE.
- v. MARY LUCE.
- vi. MERCY LUCE.
- vii. JONATHAN LUCE.

3. REMEMBER² LUCE, born about 1671 unknown place, probably daughter of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died 31 January 1739 in Tisbury;^[61] married about 1688 to **SAMUEL MERREY**,^[62] said to be the son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Parkhurst) (Hilliard) Merry,^[63] born about 1669 and died 6 October 1727 in Tisbury.^[64]

Children, all born in Tisbury:^[65]

- i. JOHN³ MERREY, b. 17 Sept. 1689.
- ii. HANNAH MERREY, b. 10 June 1692.
- iii. MARY MERREY, b. 23 Dec. 1694.
- iv. ELIZABETH MERREY, b. 15 May 1697.
- v. ABIGAIL MERREY, b. 14 June 1700.

⁵⁷ Estimated from his age at his death, see below on David.

⁵⁸ The first date is when Robert purchased land in Tisbury as recorded in Dukes County, Deeds 3:182 [note 17]. The second date is when the judge of probate appointed Henry Luce administrator of the estate of Robert Luce. Dukes County, Probate Records 1:39 [note 18].

⁵⁹ On this date Desire Luce "Widdow and Relict of the within named Robert Luce Deceased," consented to the agreement among her children. Dukes County, Probate Records 1:137 [note 20].

⁶⁰ List from Dukes County, Probate Records 1:136–137 [note 20]. Banks [note 1], 3:249, gives birthdates for each. I have been unable to find their birthdates in town records.

⁶¹ From her gravestone inscription [note 22].

⁶² Remember's gravestone in the West Tisbury Cemetery says she was the wife of Samuel Merrey. Year estimated from birthdate of their first child.

⁶³ Parents from Banks, 3: 330–331, and from Sybil Noyes, Charles Thornton Libby, and Walter Goodwin Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine and New Hampshire* (1928–39; reprint ed. Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1976), 477.

⁶⁴ The inscription on his gravestone in West Tisbury Cemetery gives his date of death and his age at death, 58 [note 22].

⁶⁵ Tisbury, Birth, Marriages, Deaths, 1683–1838, unnumbered page [FHL DGS 7,009,759, image 28]. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 73. All the children are named in the will of Samuel Merrey, Probate Records, 2:31–32 [note 21].

- vi. SAMUEL MERREY, b. 18 Dec. 1702.
- vii. MIRIAM MERREY, b. 8 Aug. 1705.
- viii. JOSEPH MERREY, b. 17 Jan. 1711/12.^[66]

4. **ISRAEL² LUCE**, born unknown date and place, son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died 20 May 1727 in Windham, Windham County, Connecticut;^[67] married 16 December 1701 in Barnstable, Barnstable County, Massachusetts, **GRACE BAKER**,^[68] born unknown; died 18 May 1730 in Windham.^[69]

Children:^[70]

- i. BENJAMIN³ LUCE, b. 26 Nov. 1709.
- ii. ELEAZAR LUCE, b. 21 Feb. 1712.
- iii. ISRAEL LUCE, b. 8 April 1714.
- iv. THANKFULL LUCE, b. 24 Nov. 1715.
- v. MARY LUCE, b. 9 May 1718.
- vi. AN[N] LUCE, b. 14 Aug. 1721.

(Deaths of additional children for which no birth date is given)

- HANNAH LUCE, d. 10 Nov. 1715.
- REBECCA LUCE, d. March 28, 1722.

5. **EXPERIENCE² LUCE**, born about 1674 probably in Tisbury,^[71] son of Henry Luce and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died 2 January 1747 [1/8?] at Tisbury;^[72] married, probably in Tisbury, **ELIZABETH** _____;^[73] born and died unknown.

Children:^[74]

- i. ZEPHANIAH³ LUCE.

⁶⁶ *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 232, lists his death as 12 November 1789 in his 78th year, which calculates to a birth year of 1712.

⁶⁷ *Barbour Collection, Windham* [note 26], 234.

⁶⁸ Barnstable, Barnstable County, Massachusetts, Transcript of Town Records, 1643–1714, 1:385 [note 23].

⁶⁹ Windham, Connecticut, Town Records, Birth, Marriages, Deaths, A:128 [FHL DGS 7,730,726, image 85]. *Barbour Collection, Windham* [note 26], page 234.

⁷⁰ Windham, Town Records, Births, Marriages, Deaths, A:22 [FHL DGS 7,730,726, image 30]. *Barbour Collection, Windham* [note 26], 233–235. Banks [note 1], 3:249 also lists a son Joseph, born first, and places Hannah as the second child born.

⁷¹ His gravestone inscription says Experience died in his 74th year, so was 73 at his death [note 30]. His parents were on Martha's Vineyard before 1674.

⁷² Gravestone inscription. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 223, has the date erroneously as June not January.

⁷³ On 20 September 1746 Experience named his wife in his will (Dukes County, Will Records 3:213 [FHL DGS 7,705,438, image 546]).

⁷⁴ From Experience's will [note 73], in the order they are named. Banks [note 1], 3:250, also lists two daughters, Jemima and Martha.

- ii. SHUBAL LUCE, b. about 1702.^[75]
- iii. TIMOTHY LUCE.
- iv. BENJAMIN LUCE, b. about 1707.^[76]
- v. JOHN LUCE, b. about 1709.^[77]

6. ELEAZER² LUCE, born unknown, probably in Tisbury, probably son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died 3 November 1740 in Southold, Suffolk County Long Island, Colony of New York;^[78] married (1) **SARAH** _____, died 16 April 1733;^[79] married (2) on 29 January 1733/4 at Southold **ABIGAIL HORTON**, widow,^[80] died 6 February 1737;^[81] married (3) 31 August 1738 at Southold **MARY SMITH**, widow.^[82]

Children:

(The Salmon records contain only deaths and marriages. There are two deaths recorded of children of Eleazar Luce: ELEAZAR LUCE junior on 9 or 10 April 1732; an unnamed daughter on 23 March 1732/3. The latter occurred a week before the death of Eleazar's first wife.^[83])

7. HENRY² LUCE, born on an unknown date, probably in Tisbury, probably son of Henry Luce and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died. between 6 March 1737/8 and 29 February 1743/4 probably in Edgartown, Dukes County;^[84] married unknown date and place, **SARAH** _____;^[85] born unknown and died after 1743.^[86]

Children:^[87]

- i. THANKFUL³ LUCE.

⁷⁵ Gravestone inscription for Shubel Luce in West Tisbury Village Cemetery says he was 48 at the time of his death on 9 August 1750 [www.history.vineyard.net/cemetery/wt/wtb20.htm].

⁷⁶ Gravestone inscription for Benjamin Luce in South End Cemetery, Tisbury, says he was in his 44th year at the time of his death on 30 January 1750 [<https://www.findagrave.com/memorial/8979059/benjamin-luce>].

⁷⁷ Gravestone inscription for John Luce in West Tisbury Village Cemetery says he was in his 78th year at the time of his death on 15 February 1786 [www.history.vineyard.net/cemetery/wt/wtb18.htm].

⁷⁸ William Salmon, ed. by William A. Robbins, *The Salmon Records: A private register of marriages and deaths of the town of Southold, Suffolk County, New York, 1696–1811* (New York: New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, 1918), 28 (37 of the original). This material was reprinted from *The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, from which it was reprinted in *Long Island Source Records* (Baltimore: Genealogical Publishing Co., 1987), 181–293 [indexed]. His name is transcribed as “Eleazer” and as “Eleazur.”

⁷⁹ *The Salmon Records* [note 78], 21 (32 of original).

⁸⁰ *Ibid.*, 83 (129 of original).

⁸¹ *Ibid.*, 24 (33 of original).

⁸² *Ibid.*, 85 (132 of original). The day and month are uncertain.

⁸³ All are recorded at *The Salmon Records*, 21 (32 of the original).

⁸⁴ These are the dates of the execution and probate of his will, Dukes County, Probate Records 3:166–167 [note 35]. Henry's land was located in Edgartown.

⁸⁵ Henry named his wife in his will.

⁸⁶ She was alive at the time his will was probated.

⁸⁷ Named in the will of Henry Luce and listed in the order named.

- ii. SILVANUS LUCE, b. 14 Sept. 1706.^[88]
- iii. CHRISTOPHER LUCE.
- iv. HENRY LUCE JR., b. 1 Jan. 1700[/01?].^[89]
- v. SARAH LUCE.

8. THOMAS² LUCE, born unknown date probably in Tisbury, son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died likely shortly before Experience Luce was named administrator of his estate on 7 July 1727;^[90] married unknown.

Children:

(Banks [note 1], 3:251, lists twelve children with estimated years of birth from 1708 to 1726. No original source has been located for the children.)

9. WILLIAM² LUCE, born unknown date probably in Tisbury, son of Henry Luce and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; d. between 20 December 1733 and 7 May 1734 in Tisbury;^[91] married ANN _____.^[92]

Children, all born in Tisbury:^[93]

- i. EBENEZER³ LUCE, b. 25 July 1707.
- ii. REMEMBER LUCE, b. 21 April 1710.
- iii. SETH LUCE, b. 14 Oct. 1713.
- iv. JOSHUA LUCE, b. 12 Sept. 1716.
- v. DEBORAH LUCE, b. 12 April 1720.

10. DAVID² LUCE, born about 1683,^[94] probably in Tisbury, son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died 15 May 1752, Windham County, Connecticut;^[95] married 9 December 1707 in Tisbury **ELIZABETH PEAS[E]**,^[96] born about 1688, died 10 November 1754 in Windham County.^[97]

Children, all born in Tisbury:^[98]

- i. JAMES³ LUCE, b. 21 April 1709.

⁸⁸ Edgartown, Dukes County, Massachusetts, Town Records 1657–1873, 106 [FHL DGS 7,009,756 image 83]. *Vital Records of Edgartown, Massachusetts, to the Year 1850* (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1906), 44.

⁸⁹ Edgartown, Town Records, 1657–1873, 106 [note 88]. *Vital Records of Edgartown* [note 88].

⁹⁰ Dukes County, Probate Records 2:24–25 [note 38].

⁹¹ The dates of the execution and probate of the will of William Luce, Probate Records 3:18–19 [note 41].

⁹² She is named in his will and in the list of his children.

⁹³ Tisbury, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1683–1838, unnumbered page [FHL DGS 7,009,759, image 26]. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 59, 62, 64, 65.

⁹⁴ Estimated from his age at his death.

⁹⁵ Inscription on his gravestone, Old Scotland Cemetery North, Scotland, Windham County, Connecticut [note 47].

⁹⁶ Tisbury, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1683–1838, unnumbered page [note 43]. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 153.

⁹⁷ Old Scotland Cemetery North, Scotland, Windham County, Connecticut [<https://www.findagrave.com/memorial/70996534/elizabeth-luce>].

⁹⁸ Tisbury, Births, Marriages, Deaths, 1683–1838, unnumbered page [note 43]. *Vital Records of Tisbury* [note 30], 56, 59, 61, 63. All of the children are named in David's will.

- ii. MERIBAH LUCE, b. 14 April 1712.
- iii. JEMIMAH LUCE, b. 14 Sept. 714.
- iv. DAVID LUCE, b. 26 June 1719.
- v. ELIZABETH LUCE, b. 6 April 1722.
- vi. ABIGAIL LUCE, b. 19 Dec. 1728.

11. JOSIAH² LUCE, born on an unknown date probably in Tisbury, probably son of Henry and Remember (Litchfield) Luce; died shortly before 23 February 1749/50 at Windham, Windham County, Connecticut;^[99] married at an unknown date and place **SARAH** _____, born and died unknown.

Children, born in Windham:^[100]

- i. JUDAH³ LUCE (daughter), b. 30 Sept. 1705.
- ii. JOSIAH LUCE, b. 18 Dec. 1707.
- iii. JONATHAN LUCE, b. 8 Aug. 1710.
- iv. NATHANIEL LUCE, b. 31 Dec. 1712.
- v. EBENEZER LUCE.
- vi. MARY LUCE.
- vii. SARAH LUCE.
- viii. ELIZABETH LUCE.
- ix. MERCY? LUCE.

B. Darrell Jackson, CG (jacksonda@aol.com), has published articles in the Register and in the National Genealogical Society Quarterly. Two of his grandchildren carry the surname "Luce" and are likely descendants of Robert Luce, one of the sons of Henry and Remember Luce.

⁹⁹ The date of inventory of the estate of Josiah Luce Late of Windham Deceased, Windham County, Probate Records 3:546 [note 50].

¹⁰⁰ The births of the first four children are listed in Windham, Births, Marriages, Deaths 1:2 [FHL DGS 7,730,726, image 20]. The receipt for receiving shares of the estate of Josiah Luce includes seven of the nine. Windham County, Probate Records 3:532, 10 June 1751 [note 51]. Judah and Nathaniel are missing from the receipt. The receipt includes two women named "Mary." One may have been Mercy. Josiah is on the receipt as Joshua. It is not known which name is correct.

The Lovett Family of Chesham, Buckinghamshire, Ancestors of Daniel¹ Lovett and His Half-Sister Elizabeth (Lovett) Twitchell, Wife of Joseph¹ Twitchell, of Massachusetts

Clifford L. Stott

James Lovett was buried in Chesham, Buckinghamshire, on 27 February 1633/4. His will of 11 February 1633/4 mentions a wife Mariah, sons Daniel, Stephen, and John Lovett, and daughter Elizabeth, wife of Joseph Twitchell. Elizabeth's legacy was reserved for her "if shee demands yt."^[1] As James was writing his will, Joseph and Elizabeth Twitchell had recently arrived in Dorchester, Massachusetts.^[2] The purpose of this article is to extend the Lovett pedigree in Chesham and provide evidence that Daniel Lovett of Braintree and Mendon, Massachusetts, was Elizabeth's half-brother. The evidence for the latter is admittedly circumstantial.

Elizabeth's immigration to New England raises suspicion that other family members might be found there, too, given the known phenomenon of cluster migration. Daniel¹ Lovett was first mentioned in Massachusetts on 24 February 1639/40 when, as Daniel "Lovell," he and his mother received 12 acres of land at "Mount Woolystone [i.e., Braintree]."^[3] The record does not reveal the name of Daniel's mother, but it is likely that she was the Mary Lovett admitted to the Dorchester Church, signing the church covenant between 1636 and 1639.^[4] Dorchester and Braintree shared a common border, and, as mentioned above, Dorchester was the residence of the Twitchells. Elizabeth Twitchell and Daniel Lovett of Chesham had no sister or sister-in-law named Mary. The most likely explanation for Mary Lovett is that she was the unnamed mother of Daniel Lovett mentioned in their Braintree land grant of 1639/40. This theory postulates that Mary followed the Twitchells to Dorchester after her husband's death in 1633/4. Onomastics also weigh heavily in favor of this theory, it being

¹ Archdeaconry Court of Buckingham, original wills, box 29, 1632–33, no. 3 (FHL film 088,563; DGS 8036603).

² Dean Crawford Smith, *The Ancestry of Eva Belle Kempton, 1878–1908*, part 3 "The Ancestry of Henry Clay Bartlett, 1832–1892" (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2004), 424, 428.

³ *Second Report of the Record Commissioners of the City of Boston containing the Boston Records, 1634–1660, and the Book of Possessions* (Boston: Rockwell and Churchill, 1881), 50–51. Lovell might be a transcription error for Lovett.

⁴ *Records of the First Church at Dorchester in New England, 1636–1734* (Boston: George H. Ellis, 1891), 3.

an unlikely coincidence that Daniel named his first two children James and Mary.^[5]

A rebuttal to this theory might include Daniel's age. Daniel Lovett of Chesham was baptized in 1608. Daniel¹ Lovett of Braintree married his only known wife, Joanna Blott, in 1644–45, making the Chesham Daniel a decade older than the typical marriage age of Englishmen at this time.^[6] Unfortunately, no record of Daniel's age has been found in Massachusetts records. Nevertheless, many men married somewhat later in life. Moreover, the above-cited Braintree land grant was for “three heads,” which included himself, his mother, and one other, perhaps an unknown first wife. The age argument is relatively weak.

Genealogical Summary

1. **JOHN^B LOVETT** of Hundridge in the parish of Chesham, Buckinghamshire, was born say 1535 (based on probable age at marriage). He was buried in Chesham, 28 June 1579, as John Lovett of “Hundrich [Hundridge].” Hundridge, was a village two miles west of the parish center. John married in Chesham, 22 July 1560, **JOAN BYRCH**, whose parents are unknown. She was called “Jaane” on the baptismal entries of her sons John and Stephen. Jane and Joan were interchangeable names at this time. Joan married second in Chesham, 23 December 1583, William Mortimer, a servant of Mr. Thomas Ashfield.^[7]

Children of John and Joan (Byrch) Lovett, all baptized or buried in Chesham:

- i. **JOHN LOVETT**, bur. 1 Nov. 1562, “sonne of John Lovet.”
- ii. **MARY LOVETT**, bp. 25 Oct. 1563; bur. there, 24 Jan. 1563/4.
2. iii. **JAMES LOVETT**, bp. 18 Nov. 1565; m. (1) **JOAN** ____; (2) **MARY** ____.
- iv. **AGNES LOVERTT**, bur. 27 May 1568, “daughter of John Lovet.”
- v. **HELENOR LOVETT**, bp. 24 March 1571/2.
- vi. **JOHN LOVETT**, bp. 7 May 1575; poss. bur. there 2 Aug. 1598, as servant of William Carter.
- vii. **STEPHEN LOVETT**, bp. 22 Feb. 1578/9; m. **RHODA** ____ by 16 Feb. 1616/7, when their son John was baptized in Chesham.

2. **JAMES^A LOVETT** was baptized in Chesham on 18 November 1565 and was buried there, 27 February 1633/4. James married first by 1589 **JOAN** _____. She was buried in Chesham, 24 March 1590/1 as “Joan wyfe of Jeames Lovet.” He married second by 1592 **MARY** _____. She was mentioned in James's

⁵ “Birthes of Brantrey” in “Boston Records,” *Register* 11 (1857):333. James born 8 July 1648, and Mary born 7 March 1651/2. Daniel's other children, also born in Braintree, were Martha, 7 June 1654, and Hannah, 30 March 1656.

⁶ Sketch of Robert Blott in Robert Charles Anderson, George E. Sanborn Jr., and Melinde Lutz Sanborn, *The Great Migration: Immigrants to New England, 1634–1635*, Vol. I (Boston: NEHGS, 1999), 336.

⁷ All Chesham baptisms, marriages, and burials cited in this article were derived from J. W. Garret-Pegg, *A Transcript of the First Volume, 1538–1636, of the Parish Register of Chesham in the County of Buckingham* (London: Elliot Stock, 1904).

will, quoted below, as “Mariah.” As Mary Lovett, she witnessed the will of her son George in 1631. Mary Lovett was admitted to the church in Dorchester, Massachusetts, between 1636 and 1639. James Lovett was a churchwarden in Chesham in 1613.^[8] He executed his will on 11 February 1633/4, and it was proved on 22 March 1633/4. The following is an excerpt:^[9]

I give unto Mariah my loveing wife the standing Bed stead wheron I lodge with the fetherbed and all the beding belonging to yt I give more unto her two paire of the best sheets and one chest standing at the Beds feet dureing her naturall life and then to remayne to Daniell Lovat my sone more I give unto her the wheat that is in my house with two fliches of Bakon more I give unto her A kittell and Two posnets^[10] and three peeces of pewter. It[em] I give and bequeath unto Stephen Lovat my sone one peire of sheets It[em] I give unto Elizabeth the wife of Joseph Twichell my daughter Twelve pence if shee demand yt. It[em] I give unto John Lovatt of Charley Wo[torn]^[11] xij^d Item I give unto the poore of chesham afore said the some of five shillings: All the Rest of my goods moveables and chattells I give and bequeath unto Danyell Lovate my sone whome I make my whole executor for the Accomplishment of this my Last will and Testament

Children of James and Joan (____) Lovett, all baptized in Chesham:

- i. ELIZABETH¹ LOVETT, bp. 27 April 1589; m. there 12 May 1614, JOSEPH¹ TWITCHELL. They went to Dorchester, Mass., in 1633.
- ii. JOHN LOVETT, bp. 23 Dec. 1590. He was presumably the John Lovett of “Charley” Wood mentioned in his father’s will. He was living in 1631 when he was mentioned in his brother George’s will. John Lovett of Salem and Beverly, Mass., often described as Daniel’s brother, was a much younger man.^[12]

Children of James and Mary (____) Lovett, all baptized in Chesham:

- iii. JAMES LOVETT, bp. 6 Jan. 1592/3; bur. there 5 Jan. 1619/20.
- iv. THOMAS LOVETT, bp. 7 Apr. 1596; prob. d. between 1631, when he was mentioned in the will of his brother George, and 1633/4, when he was omitted in his father’s will.
- v. STEPHEN LOVETT, bp. 23 June 1602 with his brother George.
- vi. GEORGE LOVETT, bp. 23 June 1602; bur. there 24 July 1631. “George Lovatt of Chesham Teyler,” reportedly made a nuncupative will before witnesses on 16 Aug. 1631, proved 4 Sept. 1631. Either the burial date or the will date must be incorrect. The will mentions his father, James Lovett, brothers Thomas, John, Stephen, and Daniel, and [sister] Elizabeth

⁸ Ibid., 344.

⁹ Archdeaconry Court of Buckingham, original wills, box 29, 1632–33, no. 3 (FHL film 088,563; DGS 8036603).

¹⁰ A posnet was a small pot with a handle and three feet.

¹¹ Probably Chorley Wood, a village seven miles southeast of Chesham.

¹² A John Lovett died in Beverly, Massachusetts, 5 November 1686, “Aged aboute seaventy six years” (*Early Records of the Town of Beverly, Essex County, Mass.* vol. 1, Births, Marriages and Deaths [Boston: Eben Putnam, 1907], 71).

Twichell. His parents, James and Mary Lovett, were witnesses. No wife or children were mentioned.^[13]

- vii. DANIEL¹ LOVETT, bp. 5 June 1608, as “Daniel soonne of James & Jane Lovet [of] hundrich [Hundridge].” Jane was probably a clerical error for Mary.^[14] Daniel was in Braintree, Mass., by 1639. He m. 1644–45, possibly as a second wife, JOANNA BLOTT.

Clifford L. Stott, CG, FASG, is a retired professional genealogist specializing in New England families and their English origins. He is a contributing editor to The American Genealogist and a consulting editor of the New England Historical and Genealogical Register. He may be contacted at cliffordstott@gmail.com.



¹³ Archdeaconry Court of Buckingham, original wills, box 28, 1630–31, no. 128 (FHL film 088,561; DGS 8467916).

¹⁴ This is the only mention of Jane Lovett in Chesham parish registers, and no burial was recorded in Chesham for James Lovett's 2d wife, Mary. James's will provided for his wife "Mariah [i.e., Maria, Mary]" in 1633/4. George Lovett's will was witnessed by his mother Mary in 1631.

The English Origin of John¹ Thurber of Swansea in Plymouth Colony, and His Descendants

Florence Thurber Gargaro, Kathryn Davitt Peters,
and Barry R. Smith

(concluded from 177 [2023]:178)

12. THOMAS³ THURBER (*Thomas², John^{1-A}*) was born at Swansea on 5 July 1700.^[368] He died after 6 October 1738, when he acknowledged a deed.^[369] Thomas married at Rehoboth on 17 April 1729, **MARY READ**.^[370]

On 27 February 1723/4, Thomas Thurber of Bristol, husbandman, released his interest in a farm at Swanzey and an island in the New Meadow Neck river to John Thurber of Swanzey, husbandman, the said farm being originally laid out to their grandfather John Thurber.^[371] Thomas was warned to leave Rehoboth with his family on 14 January 1734/5,^[372] yet we find him at the Second Congregational Church at Rehoboth, also known as the Palmer's River Church, at the baptisms of his children in 1737 and 1738. Thomas appeared on 6 October 1738 and acknowledged the 1723/4 deed to his brother. The only other record certainly attributable to Thomas is an undated deed when he conveyed something to his cousin Joel Lee (the deed was only partially copied).^[373]

Children of Thomas³ and Mary (Read) Thurber, births recorded at Rehoboth and baptisms there at the Second Congregational Church (a.k.a. the Palmer's River Church):^[374]

³⁶⁸ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8].

³⁶⁹ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 465,434], 27:220.

³⁷⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25].

³⁷¹ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 465,434], 27:220.

³⁷² Bristol County, MA: Extracts from Court of General Sessions of the Peace, 1697–1801, 44, at AmericanAncestors.org.

³⁷³ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 466,912], 52:371.

³⁷⁴ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753. Only Ruth and Hepzebeth were recorded with the town.

Robert S. Trim, *Congregational Church Records, Rehoboth, Massachusetts*, (Rehoboth, Mass.: the author, 1951), 8–9; Frank T. Calef, *Record of Baptisms in the Congregational Church in Rehoboth, Mass., 1721–1814*, [FHL 22,366, item 5], 24–5. These are both transcriptions of the church records. Both transcriptions show Ezekiel and Hepsibeth baptized on 10 July 1737, although Trim transcribes the latter as “Hesselebeth.” Trim includes Ruth on that date as well. Calef includes additional information about Thomas and Mary, so it seems he was not giving an exact transcription. Both transcriptions show Timothy baptized on 18 March 1737/8. Joanne E. Martin gave four children for Thomas and Mary, but called the last “Thomas.” It is unknown if this is indicating Timothy or if she had reason to believe there was a fifth child.

- i. RUTH⁴ THURBER, b. 1 June 1729, bp. 10 July 1737; possibly m. after int. 7 June 1777, GIDEON MARTIN.^[375]
- ii. EZEKIEL THURBER, b. maybe circa 1731, bp. 10 July 1737; d. probably by 10 Sept. 1761; m. after int. 4 April 1752, ABIGAIL WILLISTON, daughter of William and Mary (Pitcher) Williston.^[376]
Ezekiel was taken prisoner in August of 1756 at the Battle of Fort Oswego,^[377] and no further record is found. Abigail probably m. (2) Rehoboth, 10 Sept. 1761, James Bowen.^[378]
- ii. HEPZEBETH/HEPZIBAH THURBER, b. 13 April 1736, bp. 10 July 1737; d. Rehoboth, 5 Sept. 1771;^[379] m. Rehoboth, 7 March 1757, THOMAS JONES,^[380] d. probably after 1771.
- iv. TIMOTHY THURBER, bp. 18 March 1737/8.

13. RICHARD³ THURBER (*Edward², John^{1-A}*) was baptized at St. Dunstan's, Stepney on 22 June 1681.^[381] He died by 1713.

Richard married **MERCY** _____, circa 1709. She was named a granddaughter of Samuel Stafford in his will, but her parentage and her maiden surname are uncertain.^[382] She was probably born circa 1690. Richard seemingly died soon after their son Edward was born, for Mercy remarried to John Martin after intentions published 4 April 1713 at Rehoboth.^[383] She died sometime after 2 October 1758, when she requested to bow out of her duties as co-executrix of John's estate because of her "many infirmities."^[384]

The name Richard Thurbar appeared in a proclamation published in 1704. John Quelch, commander of the brigantine *Charles*, had been apprehended under suspicion of piracy, and Richard Thurbar was named among the crew.^[385] However, at a trial at the Court of Admiralty in Boston on 13 June 1704, two of the crew swore that "James Thurbar, of Swansey, was not of the company belonging to the brigantine *Charles*, though named in the first articles for the

³⁷⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 474. Gideon Martin of Swansey and Ruth Thurber of Rehoboth recorded intentions at Rehoboth, but no marriage record was found. This would be very late for a first marriage for Ruth, b. 1729, but we reluctantly make this assignment because no other Ruth Thurber is known who could have married in 1777.

³⁷⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 504; No birth record is known for Abigail, but see Bristol County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686–1880, 28819:3, at AmericanAncestors.org. This note was entered in the probate file of Abigail's father that his son and executor William made complaint against his sister Susannah Lee, wife of Joel Lee, that she had "Secreted or Embazzld" a considerable part of the household goods. Abigail Thurber wife of Ezekiel Thurber of Rehoboth was summoned to give evidence about the complaint.

³⁷⁷ Thomas B. Wyman, "List of Persons in Captivity," *Register* 14 (1860):272.

³⁷⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

³⁷⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 841.

³⁸⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 211.

³⁸¹ St. Dunstan's, Stepney, parish register; citing index from Docklands Ancestors, searchable as the London, Docklands, and East End Baptisms collection at FindMyPast.com.

³⁸² Warwick, Rhode Island, Wills [FHL 925,455], 1:135–6.

³⁸³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 473.

³⁸⁴ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 461,888], 16:121.

³⁸⁵ *The Boston News-Letter* of 29 May 1704.

voyage.”^[386] The true forename of this Thurbar is not known, but Richard’s father was a mariner and there is no known mariner named James Thurber at that time.

In October 1706, a warrant was issued for the apprehension of Richard Thurber after he was identified in court as a man in a red waistcoat who had thrown stones at Hester Chinn, wife of John Chinn resident in Bristol, an Indian.^[387]

On 17 November 1724, Richard Harding was named guardian of Edward Thurber, a minor, grandson of Edward Thurber of Swanzey, deceased.^[388]

Child of Richard³ and Mercy (____) Stafford:

- i. EDWARD⁴ THURBER, b. Swansea, 31 Jan. 1710;^[389] d. Swansea, 25 March 1777;^[390] m. Swansea, 19 Nov. 1733, HOPESTILL LUTHER,^[391] b. Swansea, 4 Oct. 1714, dau. of John and Judeth (Martin) Luther,^[392] d. Swansea, 31 July 1763 “in the 49 year of her age.”^[393]

Edward appeared at Swansea in the Mass. Valuation List of 1771.^[394] His will is dated 15 March 1777 and was proved 7 July 1777.^[395]

14. JONATHAN³ THURBER (*James², John^{1-A}*) was born at Rehoboth on 26 March 1695^[396] and baptized at the Congregational Church of Rehoboth on 28 July 1695.^[397] He died after 5 August 1762,^[398] and probably before 28 October 1765, probably at Rehoboth.

³⁸⁶ *The Arraignment, Tryal, and Condemnation, of Capt. John Quelch, and Others of his Company, &c.* (B. Bragg, 1937), issue 37 of *Photostat Americana*.

³⁸⁷ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Court of General Sessions, 1702–1714 [FHL 899,093 item 5], 106.

³⁸⁸ Bristol County, MA: Probate File Papers, 1686–1880, 25710:3, at AmericanAncestors.org.

³⁸⁹ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 61.

³⁹⁰ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 216.

³⁹¹ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 176.

³⁹² *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 75; called “Hopestill Thurber” in her father’s 1756 will, Warren, Rhode Island, Probates, 1:134.

³⁹³ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 218.

³⁹⁴ Bettye Pruitt, Massachusetts Tax Valuation Records, 1771. Ann Arbor, MI: Inter-university Consortium for Political and Social Research [distributor], 1992-02-16. <https://doi.org/10.3886/ICPSR07734.v1>; consulted as “1771 Massachusetts Tax Inventory,” (<http://sites.fas.harvard.edu/~hsb41/masstax/masstax.cgi>; accessed 2/11/2020).

³⁹⁵ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate [FHL 461,892], 25:16.

³⁹⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

³⁹⁷ Elisha L. Turner, “Baptisms, From Rehoboth Church Records,” *Register* 15 (1861):67; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, 9:522.

³⁹⁸ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 466,909], 46:23. This deed from Jonathan Thurber of Rehoboth, yeoman, to Jonathan Thurber Jr. of Rehoboth seems to show a transfer of land from Jonathan to his son. These are the only two men of that name known until 1769. Joanne E. Martin indicated that Jonathan died in Richmond, N.H., in 1746, but included a question mark. Her source is not known. No grant or survey of Richmond was made until 1752, and no rights of preemption were secured to squatters at that time. The first permanent settlers seem to have arrived in the late 1750s, or so stated William Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond, Cheshire County, New Hampshire: From its First Settlement, to 1882*, (Boston: C. W. Calkins, 1884), 9–10. It is possible, however, that Martin had the right place and the wrong year — that Jonathan Sr. removed to Richmond with his son and died shortly after. This could explain why Jonathan has no known probate record.

Jonathan married at Rehoboth on 11 March 1723/4, **MEHITABLE BULLOCK**.^[399] She was seemingly the daughter of Ebenezer and Sarah (Moulton) Bullock born at Rehoboth on 1 April 1701.^[400] No record of Mehitable has been found after the birth of her final recorded child in 1744.

A law passed in May of 1728 ostensibly exempted dissenters in the Province of Massachusetts Bay from a poll tax assessed “for the support of the minister or ministers of the churches established by the laws of this province, in the town or place where they dwell,” but it did not exempt them from other taxes for such support and it only applied if the dissenters lived within five miles of their worship house. This latter requirement ensured that Baptists living in Rehoboth and attending the Swansea church would have to pay taxes to support Rehoboth ministers. Jonathan and his brother Samuel were among a group of dissenters living at Rehoboth who were imprisoned in 1729 for refusing to pay this tax.^[401] Jonathan later appears on Rehoboth lists of Baptists exempt from ministerial taxes in 1734, 1738, 1740, 1741, 1744, and 1750.^[402]

Jonathan was a constable at Rehoboth in the 1740s.^[403]

Jonathan and several of his children appeared in Rehoboth tax lists in 1759, 1765, and 1769 (see John³ [person 9] for more details). The following heads of household appear:^[404]

1759: Jonathan; sons Jonathan Jr., David, Barnabas, and Amos; sons-in-law Timothy Fuller, Timothy Redway, and Joseph Goff. All households have one pollable individual except Jonathan Jr., who has two.

1765: Jonathan Jr. and his brothers-in-law Timothy Fuller, Timothy Redway, and Joseph Goff. The poll numbers had remained the same.

1769: sons-in-law Timothy Fuller, Timothy Redway, and Joseph Goff.

Jonathan’s sons Jonathan Jr., David, and Barnabas were all known to have left Rehoboth during this time. His sons-in-law lived and died in Rehoboth, except Timothy Redway, who removed to Vermont with his family around 1778.

Several secondary sources claim that Jonathan died in 1746, but some of these same sources place his death in Richmond, New Hampshire, which wouldn’t have been settled until over a decade later. On the other hand, there were two Jonathans living in Rehoboth until at least 1762, so we conclude these are Jonathan and his eldest son Jonathan.

The other adult male(s) in Jonathan Jr.’s household in the tax lists is a mystery. If we assume he was the same man in 1759 and 1765, then it would appear Jonathan Sr. died before 28 October 1765, at which time his name disappears from the lists. One might be concerned that the Jonathan in 1765 was still

³⁹⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 360.

⁴⁰⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 563.

⁴⁰¹ Isaac Backus, *A History of New England, With Particular Reference to the Baptists*, 1:518.

⁴⁰² H. L. Peter Rounds, “Lists of Baptists in Rehoboth, Massachusetts in the 1700s,” *Register* 138 (1984):24–31.

⁴⁰³ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 472:152, 155, 156, 158, 159.

⁴⁰⁴ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:95, 103 (for the Thurbers); 91, 95, 99, 102, 107, 111 (for the others).

called “Junior,” but as with John³ (Thomas², John¹), it seems the suffix was carried into these tax lists by the son for some time after the father had died.

Children of Jonathan³ and Mehitabel (Bullock) Thurber, recorded at Rehoboth:^[405]

- i. ELIZABETH⁴ THURBER, b. 16 Dec. 1723; d. probably at Rehoboth, by 25 May 1801;^[406] m. Rehoboth, 2 July 1749, TIMOTHY FULLER,^[407] b. Rehoboth, 8 March 1710/1, son of Samuel and Dorothy (Wilmarth) Fuller,^[408] d. 24 May 1782, bur. at the Village Cemetery in Rehoboth.^[409]
- ii. MEHITTABELL THURBER, b. 1 April 1725.
- iii. MARY THURBER, b. 11 Jan. 1726; probably m. (1) 12 July 1747, JONATHAN WILLMARTH,^[410] b. Attleborough, 29 April 1726, son of Jonathan and Beulah (Hemenway) Willmarth,^[411] d. 20 April 1752;^[412] probably m. (2) likely at Attleborough or Rehoboth after int. at Rehoboth on 24 Nov. 1753, TIMOTHY REDAWAY,^[413] b. Rehoboth, 8 Oct. 1733, son of James and Joanna (Hildreth) Redaway,^[414] d. Putney, Vt., 5 March 1813.^[415] Mary “Readway” d. probably at Calais, Vt. not long before 13 March 1813.^[416]
- iv. JONATHAN THURBER, b. 30 Jan. 1728/9; d. Richmond, N.H., 25 June 1780;^[417] m. Rehoboth, 16 April 1752, LYDIA KINGSLEY,^[418] b. Swansea, 13 Jan.

⁴⁰⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

⁴⁰⁶ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate [FHL 462,640], 38:230.

⁴⁰⁷ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 144.

⁴⁰⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 613; Clarence C. Fuller, *Records of Robert Fuller of Salem and Rehoboth and Some of His Descendants*, (Norwood, Mass.: Norwood Printing, 1969), Chapter 5.

⁴⁰⁹ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 44446323.

⁴¹⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361; *Vital Records of Attleborough* [note 321], 615.

⁴¹¹ *Vital Records of Attleborough* [note 321], 296.

⁴¹² *Vital Records of Attleborough* [note 321], 742. The record’s statement “in his 20th y.” is likely a transcription error. On 8 June 1752, his father Jonathan Willmouth and widow Mary Willmouth, both of Attleborough signed an agreement concerning the division of his property, since he had died without children, Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate [FHL 461,886], 13:178.

⁴¹³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 493. This attribution conflicts with earlier published accounts of Timothy Redway in Theodore L. Brownyard, *The Beach, Radway, Mattice, and Williams Ancestors of Mary Electa Beach Brownyard* (Silver Spring, Md.: the author, 1967; rev. 1972), 28 and Eugene Cole Zubrinsky, “The Redway/Radway Family of Putney, Vermont, A Branch of the Rehoboth, Massachusetts, Redways” *Register* 154 (2000):447. These state that Mary who married Timothy Redway in 1753 was the child Mary Wilmarth recorded to Nathan and Mary (Stacy) Wilmarth at Attleborough on 2 February 1726/7. This birth year fits Mary’s recorded age at death in 1813, but Nathaniel did not name a daughter Mary in his 1764 will (Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 461,889], 19:399–401). Mary Thurber’s recorded birth year also fits with the recorded age at death of Mary Redway. This attribution also has onomastic support, in that Mary Thurber’s father, brother, and first husband were all named Jonathan, and she had a brother David, while Timothy and Mary Redway recorded sons named Jonathan and David. The new attribution presented here is given with the gracious approval of Mr. Zubrinsky.

⁴¹⁴ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 729.

⁴¹⁵ Putney Congregational Church Records, 1:106, citing *General Index to Vital Records of Vermont, early to 1870* [FHL 27,665, images 3482–3 of 4071].

⁴¹⁶ Calais Town and Vital Records [FHL 28,016], 1:196. On 13 March 1813, the overseer for the poor for Calais in 1812 presented an account of recent expenses including an item “for property paid Mary Readway and other Expirees . . .”

⁴¹⁷ New Hampshire, *Index to deaths, early to 1900* [FHL 1,001,111; image 4472 of 5059].

⁴¹⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

1733, dau. of Oliver and Freelove (Haile) Kingsley,^[419] d. 28 Jan. 1810 aged 77 years, buried at Keene, N.H.^[420] She m. (2) Richmond, N.H., 11 Feb. 1788, Dr. Obadiah Blake.^[421]

Jonathan and Lydia seemingly removed to Richmond, N.H. by 1 September 1766, when Jonathan Thurber purchased land there and was already said to be “of Richmond.”^[422] They recorded a child at Rehoboth in 1767, so perhaps they split time for a while between both locations or perhaps Lydia had stayed in Rehoboth for childbirth. Jonathan was again said to be of Richmond in a land record dated 21 November 1767.^[423] His will is dated 28 Dec. 1776, inventory 19 Oct. 1780.^[424]

- v. PATIENCE THURBER, b. 1 April 1731; d. 3 Sept. 1819 in the 89th year of her age, bur. in Rehoboth;^[425] m. after int. at Rehoboth 1 Oct. 1748, JOSEPH GOFF,^[426] b. Rehoboth, 12 Dec. 1725, son of Richard and Martha (Toogood) Goff,^[427] d. 18 Jan. 1820 in his 95th year.^[428]

Joseph appeared on tax lists at Rehoboth in 1759, 1764, and 1769.^[429] Joseph’s will is dated 13 October 1804 and was proved 4 April 1820.^[430]

- vi. EXPERIENCE THURBER, b. 26 Jan. 1732/3.
vii. DAVID THURBER, b. 16 Oct. 1734; d. Guilford, Vt., 27 Oct. 1818;^[431] m. Rehoboth, 12 Jan. 1758, MARY BULLOCK,^[432] b. ca. 1737, d. Guilford, Vt., 19 Dec. 1831.^[433]

David served in the expedition to Fort Saint-Frédéric in 1755.^[434] David Thurber of Rehoboth, husbandman, purchased land at Wrentham

⁴¹⁹ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 106. Lydia has been previously misidentified as Lydia Carpenter, dau. of Jotham Carpenter (Amos B. Carpenter, *A Genealogical History of the Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family in America*, (Amherst, Mass.: Carpenter & Morehouse, 1898), 238). She is identifiable as “Lydia Blake” in her mother’s 1801 will (Cumberland, Rhode Island, Probates [FHL 955,491], 8:62–3), and the mistake arises from assuming Lydia was a daughter with her second husband.

⁴²⁰ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 19532229.

⁴²¹ New Hampshire, *Index to marriages, early to 1900* [FHL 1,000,962; image 3133 of 4953].

⁴²² *Province [New Hampshire] Deeds and Probate Records From 1623–1772*, [FHL 15,452], 88:457–8.

⁴²³ *Land records abstracts, 1663–1786, Franklin County, Massachusetts*, [FHL 1,769,543], 1:506.

⁴²⁴ Cheshire County, New Hampshire, Wills, Inventories, Claims, Accounts, 1771–1815 [FHL 15,715], 1:33, 417–8.

⁴²⁵ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 30933607.

⁴²⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 454.

⁴²⁷ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 620.

⁴²⁸ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 30933613; *Manufacturers’ and Farmers’ Journal* of 24 February 1820, p.3. Announcement of the deaths of both Joseph and Patience, in the 95th and 89th years of their age, respectively.

⁴²⁹ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:95, 102, 111.

⁴³⁰ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 462,650], 56:475–7.

⁴³¹ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 43580376, “aged 84”; *General index to vital records of Vermont, early to 1870* [FHL 27,709; image 2641 of 3934].

⁴³² Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

⁴³³ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 43580282, “aged 94”; *General index to vital records of Vermont, early to 1870* [FHL 27,709; image 2769 of 3934]; Jessie A. Porter, Typescript transcription of inscriptions, Carpenter Cemetery, Guilford, Vt., 5, citing database on American Ancestors. This transcription includes the added information “Nee Mary Wells or Well,” (although this is not seen in the gravestone image on findagrave), suggesting Bullock was not Mary’s maiden name.

⁴³⁴ *Massachusetts State Archives collection, colonial period, 1622–1788, Muster Rolls 1755–1756* [FHL 2,364,156], 94A:81.

in 1760 and sold it in 1763, at which time he was residing in Cumberland, R.I.^[435] He removed to Richmond, N.H., by 1766.^[436] He reportedly came with his family to Guilford in 1776^[437] and was representative of the town in 1780.^[438]

- viii. AMOS THURBER, b. 22 July 1737; d. after 5 Nov. 1759, when he appeared on a Rehoboth tax list.^[439] Amos possibly served in the Revolutionary War.^[440]
- ix. BARNABAS THURBER, b. 24 July 1739; d. Burke, Vt., 182.;^[441] m. (1) Wrentham, Mass., 18 March 1762, THANKFUL GRANT,^[442] b. Wrentham, 7 Aug. 1739, dau. of Moses and Thankful (McIntire) Grant,^[443] d. reportedly 10 Dec. 1807;^[444] m. (2) Burke, Vt., 20 September 1809, BETHIAH (LEE) SHOREY, widow of Samuel Shorey,^[445] b. Rehoboth, 1 Oct 1762, dau. of James and Elizabeth (Baker) Lee, d. Stanstead, Canada, 13 April 1846.^[446]
- Barnabas seems to have stayed in Wrentham after marriage, appearing there in the Mass. Valuation List of 1771.^[447] They removed to Cumberland, R.I., where Barnabas appeared in the 1777 military census^[448] and the 1782 census.^[449] He served on a secret mission in the Revolutionary War.^[450] He removed to Windham Co., Vt., by 1787, with perhaps a short return to Wrentham in the 1790s.^[451] After Thankful died, he moved to Burke, Vt., where his son Barnabas Jr. was an original proprietor. He remarried there and stayed for the remainder of his days.
- x. DORCAS THURBER, b. 20 July 1741.
- xi. HANNAH THURBER, b. 5 Feb. 1744.

⁴³⁵ Suffolk County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 494,599], 104:254–7.

⁴³⁶ Very few individuals had settled at Richmond before 1762, and David was chosen selectman there in 1766 (Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond*, 247).

⁴³⁷ Hamilton Child, *Gazetteer and Business Directory of Windham County, Vt., 1724–1884*, (Syracuse, N.Y.: The Journal Office, 1884), 206.

⁴³⁸ J. W. Phelps, "Guilford," *Vermont Historical Gazetteer*, (Brandon, Vt.: Carrie E. H. Page, 1891), 5 (Part 3):64.

⁴³⁹ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:95.

⁴⁴⁰ *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 17 vols. (Boston: Wright & Potter, 1896–1908), 15:707. This Amos Thurber from Rehoboth who served through 1 August 1780 is likely one of two men: the other Amos was b. 1757 the son of John (person 11 child (iii)).

⁴⁴¹ Revolutionary War Pension File W22411, Bethiah Thurber.

⁴⁴² Baldwin, Thomas W., *Vital Records of Wrentham, Massachusetts, to the year 1850*, (Boston, Mass.: NEHGS, 1910), 1:103; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 456. Int. at Rehoboth, 27 Feb. 1762, groom's name "Barnard _____."

⁴⁴³ *Vital Records of Wrentham* [note 442], 1:103; Suffolk County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 494,606], 121:149–50. This 1771 deed calls Moses Grant the father-in-law of Barnabas Thurber.

⁴⁴⁴ A. E. Thurber, *Thurber family genealogy*, 52. He provides only a source list, but this mentions a family bible that apparently belonged to Thankful's grandson Zimri Thurber.

⁴⁴⁵ Revolutionary War Pension File W22411, Bethiah Thurber.

⁴⁴⁶ Revolutionary War Pension File W22411, Bethiah Thurber.

⁴⁴⁷ Pruitt, Massachusetts Tax Valuation Records, 1771 [note 447]; indexed as *Barnabas Thurber*.

⁴⁴⁸ "1777 Military Census, Cranston, Rhode Island," *Rhode Island Roots* 8 (1982):58.

⁴⁴⁹ Katharine U. Waterman, "The Rhode Island Census of 1782," *Register* 129 (1975):385.

⁴⁵⁰ *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 15:707.

⁴⁵¹ Esther L. Friend, "Notifications and Warnings Out: Strangers Taken into Wrentham, Massachusetts Between 1732 and 1812," *Register* 142 (1988):59.

15. SAMUEL³ THURBER (*James², John^{1-A}*) was born at Rehoboth on 26 August 1700.^[452] He died at Providence on 20 December 1785.^[453]

Samuel married first at Rehoboth on 27 December 1722, **RACHAL WHEELER**.^[454] She was born at Rehoboth on 4 April 1701, the daughter of James and Grizzell (Squire) Wheeler,^[455] and died at Rehoboth on 19 June 1755.^[456] Samuel married second at Sutton, Massachusetts, on 9 November 1756, **LYDIA SINGLETARRY**,^[457] who was reportedly born at Sutton in 1702.^[458] She died on 12 January 1769 and is buried at the North Burial Ground in Providence.^[459] Samuel married for a third time at Warwick, Rhode Island, on 27 May 1770, **WEALTHIAN (SHELDON) (WILLIAMS) TOURTELLOT**,^[460] born about 1711, reportedly the daughter of Timothy and Rebecca Sheldon and widow of first John Williams and then Abraham Tourtellot.^[461] She died at Cranston on 6 or 7 January 1804 in the 93rd year of her age.^[462]

Early Rehoboth deeds from his father and from Samuel Bullock call Samuel yeoman, husbandman, and cordwinder.^[463] Samuel and his brother Jonathan were among a group of dissenters living at Rehoboth who were imprisoned in 1729.^[464]

Samuel left Rehoboth for Providence between 1759 and 1765, where he remained. He came to join his sons Samuel⁴, who had left for Providence by 1748, and son Benjamin, who likely came to Providence in the 1750s.

Samuel and several of his children appeared in Rehoboth tax lists in 1759, 1765, and 1769 (see John³ [person 9] for more details), sometimes with

⁴⁵² Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

⁴⁵³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Providence):176.

⁴⁵⁴ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 360.

⁴⁵⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 771; Rachel was named the wife of Samuel Thurber in her father's 1741 will, Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 461,886], 13:400–2.

⁴⁵⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 881.

⁴⁵⁷ *Vital records of Sutton, Massachusetts, to the end of the year 1849*, (Worcester, Mass.: F. P. Rice, 1907), 368.

⁴⁵⁸ RIHCC, indexed as *Lydia Thurber*. A search for marriages of Singletary men to women named Lydia turned up a reasonable candidate: Lydia King, b. Salem, 16 Dec. 1702/3, dau. of William and Hannah (Cook) King, who m. Sutton, 28 March 1727, Nathaniel Singletary of Framingham. She was alive and called “Lydia Singletary” when her father made his will on 8 Nov. 1743 (Worcester County, Massachusetts, Probate 2:280–1).

⁴⁵⁹ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 33371157. This is a family grave marker and seems to have been erected at least several decades after her death.

⁴⁶⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 1 (Warwick):118.

⁴⁶¹ There is no question that Timothy Sheldon had a daughter Wealthian who married a Williams, (G. Andrews Moriarty, “Additions and Corrections to Austin’s Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island,” *The American Genealogist* 27:222), and this marriage is presumed to be that recorded between John Williams and Wealthian Sheldon (Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, [note 22], 2 (Providence):167). There is also no question that Abraham Tourtellot had married a Wealthian, and that after he died his widow married Samuel Thurber. Only secondary sources are known to connect Wealthian (Sheldon) Williams to Wealthian Thurber, but her death announcement places her birth right in the small window of years possible for both a daughter of Timothy Sheldon and the wife of John Williams.

⁴⁶² Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 14:341; Henry Melville King, *Historical Catalogue of the Members of the First Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island*, (Providence: Townsend, F.H., 1908) 28.

⁴⁶³ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 465,437], 16:250–2 and 35:626.

⁴⁶⁴ Isaac Backus, *A History of New England, With Particular Reference to the Baptists*, 1:518.

indications that they were being taxed on land they owned in Rehoboth even while they lived in Providence. The following pollable individuals are named:^[465]

1759, list 2: Samuel Thurber and son “Herekah”

1765, list 2: Samuel Thurber Providence, Samuel Thurber Jun. Providence, James Thurber Esqr., and Daniel Thurber

1769, list 2: James Thurber Esqr. and Daniel Thurber

Several of Samuel’s children were on a list of “Subscribers for the Township Lying on Tantimar River,” which later became Sackville, New Brunswick.^[466] This list dates from 1760 or 1761 and comprises men in Providence who desired to obtain land in the New Township. Benjamin Thurber was one of three representatives of the entire group, and the list also included a Sam Thurber, Daniel Thurber, and Edward Thurber. Benjamin and Daniel were Samuel’s sons, “Sam” could have been either Samuel himself or his son, and Edward was either Samuel’s brother or his nephew.

Samuel appears in the Rhode Island census of 1774 in a cluster of related households.^[467] Above him are his nephew and niece Edward Thurber and Mary (Thurber) Alger, then his son Samuel Thurber Jr. followed by Charles Keen, who seems not to be related to the Thurbers. Below Samuel is his grandson Martin Thurber. In the Providence census of 1776, we find Samuel, son Samuel, grandson Martin, and nephews Edward and William.^[468] In the Rhode Island military census of 1777, we find again Edward, Samuel (aged 60+), Samuel Jr. (aged 50–60), Samuel 3rd, Martin, and now Samuel’s grandson Squire Thurber.^[469] In the Rhode Island census of 1782, Samuel appears together with son Samuel, nephew Edward Thurber, and Benjamin Alger and Samuel Hill, husbands of Samuel’s nieces Mary and Elizabeth, with son Benjamin and grandson Martin nearby.^[470]

Samuel made his will on 8 November 1785 and it was proved on 6 February 1786.^[471] It mentions the heirs of his second wife Lydia Thurber late deceased, his present wife Welthian; sons Samuel, James, Benjamin, Daniel, and Hezekiah; daughters Rachel Martin and Mary Mason, and grandsons Silas Covell and Olney Winsor.

Children of Samuel³ and Rachel (Wheeler) Thurber, recorded at Rehoboth:^[472]

⁴⁶⁵ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:91, 99, 107.

⁴⁶⁶ Ray Greene Huling, “The Rhode Island Emigration to Nova Scotia,” *The Narragansett Historical Register*, 7 (1989):124–6.

⁴⁶⁷ Cherry Fletcher Bamberg, “1774 Census of Rhode Island: Providence,” *Rhode Island Roots* 31 (2005):78.

⁴⁶⁸ Cherry Fletcher Bamberg, “1776 Census of Providence, Rhode Island,” *Register* 159 (2005):151.

⁴⁶⁹ “1777 Military Census, Cranston, Rhode Island,” *Rhode Island Roots* 8 (1982):58.

⁴⁷⁰ Katharine U. Waterman, “The Rhode Island Census of 1782,” *Register* 129 (1975):385.

⁴⁷¹ Providence, R.I., Wills [FHL 915,008], 6:539–540. Samuel’s probate account is in Providence, Rhode Island, Probate case files, A1230.

⁴⁷² Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

- i. SAMUEL⁴ THURBER, b. 27 Oct. 1724; d. Providence, 18 July 1807;^[473] m. Rehoboth, 15 May 1748, HOPESTILL MARTIN,^[474] prob. daughter of Edward and Rebecka (Peck) Martin, b. Rehoboth, 8 May 1725,^[475] d. 7 July 1785 “in the 61st year of her age.”^[476]

Land records from 1758–9 call Samuel a “sadler.”^[477] He was living in Providence by 1748 when he married. It is presumably he who was made freeman at Providence on 30 April 1751.^[478] He built a house on Constitution Hill in Providence around 1750.^[479] Samuel built a paper mill in Providence by 1780 with sons Samuel, Edward, and Martin.^[480] His will is dated 16 April 1804 and was proved 27 July 1807.^[481] Samuel and Hopestill are the ancestors of author and cartoonist James⁹ Grover Thurber.

- ii. JAMES THURBER, b. 28 June 1726; d. 19 Sept. 1805;^[482] m. (1) Swansea, 18 June 1749, LYDIA HARDING/HARDEN,^[483] (reported) dau. of Richard and Mary (Thurber) Harding,^[484] b. ca. 1727, d. 5 March 1765;^[485] m. (2) Rehoboth, 25 May 1766, MARTHA CLARK,^[486] d. August, 1786;^[487] m. (3) Rehoboth, 29 March 1787, HOPESTILL (MARTIN) MASON, widow of Samuel Mason,^[488] daughter of Sylvanus and Martha (Wheeler) Martin b. Rehoboth, 19 Dec. 1750.^[489]

It seems James briefly went to Providence with his brother or father, as his name appeared on a list of men made freemen at Providence in May 1753.^[490] Any such stay was short-lived, as all other records show him in Rehoboth. James was consistently called “Esquire” in legal documents. He lived one mile southwest of the Orleans factory (within the limits

⁴⁷³ Death notice, 18 July 1807, *The Providence Gazette*, 3.

⁴⁷⁴ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 240.

⁴⁷⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 671; Henry J. Martin, *Notices Genealogical and Historical of the Martin Family of New England*, (Boston: Lee and Shepard, 1880), 114.

⁴⁷⁶ Death notice, 9 July 1785, *The Providence Gazette*, 3.

⁴⁷⁷ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 466,912], 51:344–5 and 350–1.

⁴⁷⁸ *Supplement to the Rhode Island Colonial Records*, 36.

⁴⁷⁹ Richard M. Bayles, *History of Providence County, Rhode Island*, (New York: W. W. Preston, 1891), 1:598, 601. It is stated that Samuel the father came to Providence and built this house, but tax lists and a 1756 deed show that the father had remained in Rehoboth while the son was in Providence.

⁴⁸⁰ *American Journal and General Advertiser* of 30 December 1780, p.3. This advertisement announced that Samuel Thurber Jr. would pay for clean cotton and linen rags or canvas at the new paper mill at the north end of Providence.

⁴⁸¹ Providence, Rhode Island, Wills [FHL 915,011], 10:113–114.

⁴⁸² Gravestone; his death was announced in the *Providence Gazette* of 21 June 1805; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 14:341.

⁴⁸³ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 191; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

⁴⁸⁴ Abner Morse, *A Genealogical Register of the Descendants of Several Ancient Puritans*, 4:65; her purported mother was the daughter of Thomas² — see person 4, child iv.

⁴⁸⁵ Gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 21985317.

⁴⁸⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

⁴⁸⁷ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 881.

⁴⁸⁸ They had married 27 May 1773 and he had died 1 Dec. 1786, Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth*, [note 25], 248, 850; gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 141137064.

⁴⁸⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 672.

⁴⁹⁰ *Supplement to the Rhode Island Colonial Records*, 43.

of the present town of Seekonk).^[491] He appears on Rehoboth tax lists in 1765 and 1769 and at Rehoboth for the Massachusetts tax list of 1771.^[492]

He is reportedly the James Thurber who served at the Lexington Alarm.^[493]

On 23 November 1795, Samuel Thurber, Benjamin Thurber, and other relatives and friends put before the court that James was a “lunatick.” They declared him *non compos mentis* and appointed Philip Miller to be James’s guardian on 28 June 1796. On 13 February 1798, James petitioned the court to release him from guardianship on the grounds that he had been restored to reason, and on 6 March 1798 they granted his petition.^[494] Administration of his estate was granted to the widow Hopesstill on 1 October 1805,^[495] and division of his estate was made 4 Nov. 1806.^[496] He was buried on Burial Place Hill in Rehoboth.^[497]

- iii. RACHALL THURBER, b. 17 July 1728; d. 26 May 1805;^[498] possibly m. Providence, 15 July 1781, WILLIAM MARTIN,^[499] as his second wife. He d. at Glocester, R.I., 1 November 1791.^[500]

Rachel belonged to the First Baptist Church in Providence and left in December 1785 for the Smithfield Church.^[501] The will of William Martin of Glocester, yeoman, is dated 16 January 1788 and was proved on 14 November 1791.^[502] It names his “present wife” Rachel.

- iv. JOHN THURBER, b. 26 Aug. 1730; d.y.

- v. MARY THURBER, b. 15 Sept. 1732; d. prob. Rehoboth, 9 July 1736.^[503]

⁴⁹¹ A. E. Thurber, *Thurber family genealogy*, 55. He gives much of the information given here, and cites “old papers” in the possession of Albert C. Mason which also give James the birthdate 24 June 1725.

⁴⁹² Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:99 and 107.

⁴⁹³ *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 15:709 and DAR Lineage Book, 48:104. (He would have been over 50 years old, so this attribution seems questionable.)

⁴⁹⁴ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate [FHL 462,638], 34:175, 188 and [FHL 462,639] 35:91, 315.

⁴⁹⁵ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate, [FHL 461,911], 150:123.

⁴⁹⁶ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate, [FHL 462,642], 42:396–400.

⁴⁹⁷ Gravestone for James Thurber, Esq., “In the 80th year of his age,” image on findagrave.com, memorial 113484790.

⁴⁹⁸ Death announcement, *Providence Gazette* of 1 June 1805, page 3, “Mrs. Rachel Martin, relict of Mr. William Martin, late of Glocester, in the 87th [*sic*] year of her age.”

⁴⁹⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 10:213. She would be rather old for a first marriage, but William Martin would have been even older and no other candidate Rachel Thurbers present themselves. The newspaper reports of her death make her exactly ten years older than this Rachel — we assume that is an error.

⁵⁰⁰ Death date given when inventory of his estate was presented.

⁵⁰¹ Henry Melville King, *Historical Catalogue of the Members of the First Baptist Church in Providence*, 24.

⁵⁰² Glocester, Rhode Island, Probates [FHL 941,847], 2:164–9.

⁵⁰³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 880. The recorded death date was two weeks *after* the recorded birth date for her younger sister Mary. Because it was rare at this place and time for a family to have two living children with the same name, we might suppose then that Mary born 1732 died by 1736 and her younger sister born in 1736 only lived for two weeks, but Samuel’s will proves he had a daughter Mary who lived to adulthood and married a Mason. Rather than suppose there was a third Mary with unrecorded birth date, there seems a simpler scenario: the birth of Mary in 1736 may have occurred before but been recorded after the death of Mary born

- vi. BENJAMIN THURBER, b. 14 July 1734; d. Providence, 28 April 1807;^[504] m. Cranston, R.I., 30 Dec. 1756, PHEBE DYER.^[505] reported dau. of Charles and Abigail (Williams) Dyer.^[506]

Benjamin was made freeman at Providence in May 1756,^[507] and he and his wife were baptized at the Baptist Church in Providence in 1759.^[508] He appeared in Providence in the Rhode Island census in 1774. He was a merchant with a shop on Constitution Street. He appeared regularly in Providence newspapers throughout his life, advertising his business and appearing in other roles through his active public life. However, Benjamin disappears from newspaper records from 1775 through 1779, and he does not appear in the 1776 census of Providence or the 1777 Military Census. He sold land in 1777 while living at Pomfret, Connecticut, so presumably this explains the gap.^[509] He also served for several one-month periods during the Revolutionary War, from 1776 to 1780.^[510]

Benjamin reappeared in 1779, running an ad for the sale of property in Pomfret, Conn.^[511] He returned to Providence and reopened his old shop in 1781.^[512] He left to become one of the first settlers at Troy, N.Y., around Sept. 1786, taking with him the “sign of the bunch of grapes” to hang outside his new shop, but he returned to Providence by 1790.^[513] His sign was later used by his daughter, his grandson, and then Gladding’s department store until 1972. It is probably one of the longest continuous uses of a trade sign in American history.

While living primarily in Providence, Benjamin frequently bought and sold land in other places. In 1760 or 1761, he was one of three representatives from Providence for a group of residents who were subscribers to the new township of Sackville in New Brunswick. He continued trading property in Sackville until the late 1780s. He also traded property in New Hampshire in the mid-1780s. Very often his cousin Edward was involved in these transactions, either as a co-owner or counterparty.

His will, which calls him merchant, is dated 14 April 1807 and was proved 11 May 1807.^[514]

1732, and if so, the family might have changed the younger daughter’s name to Mary to honor her recently deceased sister. The gravestone of Mary (Thurber) Mason corroborates this theory, implying a birth year around 1736.

⁵⁰⁴ Death notice in *Columbian Phenix* of 2 May 1807, 2.

⁵⁰⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Cranston):25.

⁵⁰⁶ Bertha W. Anthony, *Roger Williams of Providence, R.I.*, (Cranston, R.I.: the author, 1949), 161.

⁵⁰⁷ Bartlett, *Records of the Colony of R.I.*, 5:487.

⁵⁰⁸ Henry Russell Drowne, “Some Vital Records of Providence, R.I.,” *New York Genealogical and Biographical Record* 46 (1915):81.

⁵⁰⁹ Providence, R.I., Deeds [FHL 901,261], 19:294.

⁵¹⁰ *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 15:708.

⁵¹¹ *Connecticut Gazette* of 1 Dec. 1779, page 4.

⁵¹² *Providence Gazette* of 29 Dec. 1781, page 3.

⁵¹³ Arthur James Weise, *The City of Troy and its Vicinity*, (Troy, N.Y.: Edward Greene, 1886), 292.

⁵¹⁴ Providence, Rhode Island, Wills [FHL 915,011], 10:112.

- vii. MARY THURBER, b. 25 June 1736; d. Saxtons River, Vt., 21 April 1820;^[515] m. Swansea, 25 April 1765, OLIVER MASON,^[516] b. Swansea, 21 Feb. 1737/8, son of Oliver and Martha (Cole) Mason,^[517] d. Westminster, Vt., 1 July 1798.^[518]
- viii. DANIELL THURBER, b. 30 June 1738; d. Rehoboth, 8 Feb. 1804;^[519] m. Rehoboth, 9 Oct. 1760, LOIS PECK,^[520] b. Rehoboth, 1 Aug. 1741, dau. of Thomas and Deliverance (May) Peck.^[521] She d. aged 70 and was buried at Rehoboth.^[522]

Daniel was living in Providence at the time of his marriage in 1760 and was listed as the owner of a shop on hired land at Providence on 13 August 1762.^[523] He had returned to Rehoboth by 1767 and was called “whip maker.”^[524] He was in Rehoboth in the 1771 Massachusetts tax list.^[525] Daniel’s will is dated 16 Dec. 1803 and was proved 3 April 1804.^[526]

- ix. HEZEKIAH THURBER, b. 11 August 1741; d. after 20 July 1793;^[527] m. Smithfield, R.I., 6 Nov. 1767, RACHEL HARKNESS,^[528] b. Smithfield, 22 Jan. 1748, dau. of Adam and Mary (Gaskill) Harkness.^[529]

He went to Richmond, N.H., by the time of his marriage and lived on the place where Jacob Bump first settled near the southwest corner of Cass Pond. He was called “husbandman” and “yeoman” in land records. He reportedly removed to Saratoga, N.Y., about 1795.^[530] He enlisted at Richmond in 1775,^[531] appearing on the muster roll of Col. Samuel Ashley’s regiment which marched to the relief of Ticonderoga.^[532]

16. EDWARD³ THURBER (*James², John^{1-A}*) was born at Swansea on 29 April 1702.^[533] He died on 10 June 1768 and was buried at the North Burial Ground

⁵¹⁵ In the 84th year of her age, gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 57966761.

⁵¹⁶ *Vital Records of Swansea*, 199; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 248; her father called her “Mary Mason” in his will.

⁵¹⁷ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 126.

⁵¹⁸ In the 61st year of his age, gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 57966231.

⁵¹⁹ A. E. Thurber, *Thurber family genealogy*, 59; Daniel Thurber “aged 66 years,” family grave marker, image on findagrave.com, memorial 53038817.

⁵²⁰ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

⁵²¹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 705; Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 461,889], 18:504–9, called the wife of Daniel Thurber in the 1766 division of her father’s estate.

⁵²² Family grave marker, image on findagrave.com, memorial 53038897.

⁵²³ Jane Fletcher Fiske, “Rhode Island Freemen Admitted 1760–1762,” *Rhode Island Roots* 12 (1986) 34.

⁵²⁴ Bristol County, Massachusetts Deeds [FHL 466,911], 50:419–20.

⁵²⁵ Pruitt, Massachusetts Tax Valuation Records, 1771 [note 447], indexed as *Daniel Thurber*.

⁵²⁶ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probate [FHL 462,641], 40:356–7.

⁵²⁷ Executed deed, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, Deeds [FHL 15,632], 21:475.

⁵²⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22] (Smithfield):75.

⁵²⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22] (Smithfield):99; Bassett, *History of the Town of Richmond, N.H.*, 509.

⁵³⁰ A. E. Thurber, *Thurber family genealogy*, 60.

⁵³¹ *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War*, 15:708.

⁵³² “Muster rolls, payrolls, strength returns, and other miscellaneous personnel, pay, and supply records of American Army units, 1775–83,” NARA M246; consulted through Fold3.com, “Revolutionary War Rolls, 1775–1783,” database with images, folder 44, page 34.

⁵³³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

at Providence, his stone engraved, “In Memory of Edward Thurber Late Deacon of the Baptiss Church in prouidence Who Departed This Life June 10th 1768 in 67th Year of his Age.”^[534]

Edward posted intentions of marriage with Sarah Burr on 13 April 1728, but no marriage or child is known.^[535] He posted intentions of marriage again on 4 May 1734, this time with Sarah Chace, but the marriage was forbidden. He married at Rehoboth on 21 February 1734/5, CHARITY GALUSHA, born 10 March 1716, perhaps to Jacob Galusha.^[536] She died at Rehoboth on 17 August 1736.^[537] Edward then married at Swansea on 6 November 1737, HANNAH KINGSLEY,^[538] born 31 January 1718/9, the daughter of Nathaniel and Christien (Cole) Kingsley.^[539] She died at Providence on 25 February 1776 and was buried at the North Burial Ground.^[540]

Edward removed to Providence around 1739.^[541] He was entered as a freeman of the Colony of Rhode Island at Providence on 4 May 1742.^[542] He was chosen deacon of the First Baptist Church in Providence in 1759.^[543]

Edward made his will on 8 April 1768 and it was proved on 4 July 1768.^[544] It names his wife Hannah; sons Joseph, Edward, James, and William; and daughters Elizabeth and Mary. One bequest was a lot at Camp Hill to be divided equally among his sons Edward, James, and William and daughters Elizabeth and Mary. A copy of a deed from 15 March 1780 shows the consolidation of this property with son Edward -- William Thurber, Samuel Hill and Elizabeth his wife, and Benjamin Alger and Mary his wife convey land at Camp Hill in Providence to Edward Thurber.^[545]

Child of Edward³ and Charity (Galusha) Thurber, recorded at Rehoboth:^[546]

⁵³⁴ Gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Edward Thurber*.

⁵³⁵ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 504. This page shows both this intention and the one following with Sarah Chase. It gives the year of the second intention as 1774, but is chronologically placed between records from 1728 and 1737. The other entry that lists Sarah Chace first is on page 440, and gives the year as 1734.

⁵³⁶ Birthdate inferred from her death record. See also Ezra S. Stearns, *Early Generations of the Founders of Old Dunstable* (Boston, Mass.: Littlefield, 1911), 21–23. Records of the early Galusha families are scarce, but Charity was likely a grandchild of the immigrant Daniel Galusha, who has four known sons. The most likely candidate for her father seems to be Jacob.

⁵³⁷ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 880.

⁵³⁸ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 176.

⁵³⁹ *Vital Records of Swansea* [note 8], 75.

⁵⁴⁰ Gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Hannah Thurber*; Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island*, [note 22], 14:340. Her stone says she was in the 56th year of her age, a two-year mismatch with her known birth record.

⁵⁴¹ Bristol County, Massachusetts, Deeds [FHL 465,433], 26:371 and Providence, Rhode Island, Deeds [FHL 901,257], 10:261–2. The first deed, from 6 Sept. 1738, is the last record of Edward selling land at Rehoboth, and the second, also from 1738, is his first purchase in Providence. At that time he was said to be a tanner, of Rehoboth.

⁵⁴² Bartlett, *Records of the Colony of R.I.*, 5:42.

⁵⁴³ King, *Catalogue of the First Baptist Church*, 24.

⁵⁴⁴ Providence, Rhode Island, Wills 5:475–6

⁵⁴⁵ *Rhode Island Archival and Manuscript Collections Online* at riamco.org, Office of the General Treasurer Land Evidence records (1997-137), Series 1 Land Evidence Records, Box 1, Folder 2.

⁵⁴⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 753.

- i. JOSEPH⁴ THURBER, b. 18 Feb. 1736; d. Oswegatchie, N.Y., around April 1815;^[547] probably m. Rehoboth, 18 April 1754, REBECKAH GOFF,^[548] b. Rehoboth, ca. 1737, probably dau. of Richard and Martha (Toogood) Goff,^[549] d. probably at Dighton, 1 March 1786.^[550] They seemingly separated. Joseph m., ca. 1769 at Huntington, N.Y., SARAH KELSEY,^[551] b. Huntington, N.Y., 18 Feb. 1749,^[552] probably daughter of Timothy and Keziah (Ketchum) Kelsey,^[553] d. Morristown, N.Y., 8 Sept. 1841.^[554]

Evidence regarding Joseph is complicated enough that the records have sometimes been thought to come from two different men. We feel the evidence is stronger that they all pertain to the same man but that he divorced or otherwise separated from his first wife and family.

The first record of a person named Joseph Thurber is the 1736 birth record.^[555] The next record is the 1754 marriage to Rebecca Goff. The first conundrum concerning his timeline is that Joseph seems to alternate between Providence and Rehoboth for the next 15 years. He appears in Providence, becoming freeman in 1757 just a couple of months after

⁵⁴⁷ Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, Sarah K. Thurber.

⁵⁴⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 361.

⁵⁴⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 620; records Rebeckah Goff b. 11 May 1733.

Clarence E. Peirce, unpublished Thurber manuscript at the Rhode Island Historical Society, citing *Holy Bible* (New York: Collins & Co., 1814), which Peirce reported to be in the possession of Mrs. Charles H. Horton (Mrs. Josephine Peckham (Chase) Horton) of Woonsocket, R.I. Peirce reproduces the recorded 1733 date and also reports an alternative year of 1737 from the bible. It seems Richard and Martha may have named two daughters Rebeckah: in 1748, Martha Gofe of Rehoboth, widow, was granted guardianship of her children Bethiah and Rachel, both over 14 years old, and her daughter Rebecca, under 14 years old, all children of Richard Gofe deceased, Bristol County, Massachusetts, Probates [FHL 461,885], 11:550-1. This corroborates Rebecca being born after 1736. All of Richard and Martha's recorded children were spaced by at most 2.5 years except for a gap between 1735 and 1741, so 1737 fits. One item that does not correlate is the name of Rebeckah's mother: Peirce quotes the bible as calling her both "Grand Mother Goff" and "Rebekah Goff." It is presumed that this latter is a mistake.

⁵⁵⁰ Gravestone for Mrs. Rebekah Wastcoat, "In the 50th year of her age," image on findagrave.com, memorial 89037472.

⁵⁵¹ Testimony of Sarah K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, consulted through Fold3.com, pages 14-5. This file also contains affidavits by Susan Youngs of Oyster Bay and Keturah Kelsey, widow of Nathaniel, of Huntington, as evidence of the marriage (presumed to be Sarah's sister and sister-in-law).

See also Revolutionary War Pension File W16314, Sarah June. This file includes a letter that Sarah K. Thurber's son wrote to a friend in Huntington to obtain proof of the marriage, and the friend reported that the clergyman mentioned in Susan Young's affidavit had moved west and died and that none of his records could be found.

⁵⁵² Testimony of Sarah K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, consulted through Fold3.com, pages 14-5.

⁵⁵³ Edward A. Claypool and Azalea Clizbee, *A Genealogy of the Descendants of William Kelsey*, 4 vols. (New Haven, Conn.: Tuttle, Morehouse & Taylor, 1928-47), 1:200. Sarah Kelcey daughter of Timothy was baptized at the First Church of Huntington, N.Y., on 29 October 1749. The Susan Youngs and Keturah Kelsey who supplied affidavits in her pension file were apparently her sister and sister-in-law.

⁵⁵⁴ Testimony of John K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, Sarah K. Thurber, consulted through Fold3.com, page 7.

⁵⁵⁵ The claim that a Joseph Thurber witnessed the 1724 will of Preserved Redaway was debunked in the introduction.

attaining his majority.^[556] He then appears on a Rehoboth tax list in 1759, with no assessable property.^[557] He recorded a child at Rehoboth in 1763,^[558] and then was said to be late of Providence before coming to New York by 1769.^[559]

C. E. Peirce reported that a family bible record for Rebecca gave birth records for five children from 1754 to 1763 but seemingly only the last one was publicly recorded, at Rehoboth. Indirect evidence corroborates the entries for some of the other children. The first child was notably named Charity, the name of Joseph's mother.

Greater confusion arises starting in 1769. Joseph was left land in 1768 by his father in his will, and he sold that same land to William Thurber in a deed dated 4 Dec. 1772, when he was called "Joseph Thurber of Long Island in the Province of New York now resident at Norwalk Brass Founder."^[560] He acknowledged the deed the same day at Stratford, Conn. Revolutionary War pension testimony by Susan Youngs [Sarah's sister] corroborates that Joseph Thurber was of Huntington in Long Island in 1769, residing there for at least a year and then leaving for Norwalk, Conn. Sarah's testimony states that they married at Huntington in 1769, at which time he was late of Providence.

Rebecca Thurber then posted intentions to marry Cornelius Westcott at Dighton on 18 November 1774.^[561] The family bible record states, according to Peirce, that she was born in 1737 and died 1 March 1786 "in the 50th year of her age." This is corroborated by her gravestone. It seems Joseph and Rebecca had separated by 1769. Since both remarried, either they had divorced or else both had lied about being eligible to marry.

To summarize: Joseph the son of Edward and Charity probably grew up in Providence, then went to New York by 1769. The question is whether the Joseph Thurber who married Rebecca Goff was the same man, marrying rather young at 18 years old. If he was a separate man, then that man seems to have lived in Rehoboth, leaving no trace in vital, land, or court records, and died by 1774. But the onomastic evidence — Joseph and Rebecca naming their first child Charity, and the timing of the disappearance of Joseph from the Rehoboth records just a few years before showing up in New York, and finally the lack of vital, land, or court records showing a possible contemporary Joseph living in Rehoboth, seems to point more strongly toward the extant records all being a paper trail left by one man.

The timeline of Joseph's life after 1769 is documented in Sarah's Revolutionary War widow pension file. Sometime around 1772, he

⁵⁵⁶ Bartlett, *Records of the Colony of R.I.*, 6:44.

⁵⁵⁷ Bowen, *Early Rehoboth* [note 7], 4:94.

⁵⁵⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 754.

⁵⁵⁹ Testimony of Sarah K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, consulted through Fold3.com, pages 14–5.

⁵⁶⁰ Providence, Rhode Island, Deeds [FHL 901,261], 19:178.

⁵⁶¹ Elizabeth Janet MacCormick and Edith Whitney Shaw, *Town Records of Dighton, Massachusetts, 1714–1780*, 2 vols. (Dighton, MA: 1939):1:95.

came briefly to Norwalk Conn., then on to Rumney, N.H. While there, Joseph enlisted, initially joining as a lieutenant in the New Hampshire Line. He and Sarah removed to Newbury, Vt., in 1778. There he was a captain in the Vermont Scouts and also served as a private volunteer.^[562] They then removed to Mooretown (now Bradford) until the end of the war, then continued moving, to Berlin, Vt., in 1785, to Plattsburgh, N.Y., around 1786, then in the 1790s to St. Anne's in Lower Canada and Augusta in Upper Canada, before coming to Oswegatchie, N.Y., around 1798, where Joseph died.^[563] Part of Oswegatchie became Morristown, where Sarah spent the remainder of her days.

Joseph was a pioneer, called the first settler at Berlin, Vt.^[564] and then the first settler at his final place of residence on Black Lake in St. Lawrence Co., N.Y.^[565]

Children of Edward³ and Hannah (Kingsley) Thurber, births recorded at Providence (Edward born at Rehoboth and also recorded there, Nathaniel not recorded):^[566]

- ii. EDWARD THURBER, b. 8 Aug. 1738; d. Providence, 16 June 1809, bur. at the North Burial Ground, Providence;^[567] m. (1) Providence, 22 Nov. 1766, MARY SPRING,^[568] b. Uxbridge, Mass., 19 Dec. 1743, dau. of John and Sarah (Read) Spring;^[569] d. 23 Jan. 1767;^[570] m. (2) Providence, 17 Nov. 1771, MARY WINSOR,^[571] b. 28 March 1754, dau. of Abraham and Sarah (Smith) Winsor;^[572] d. 25 August 1825.^[573]

Edward was on a voting list at Providence on 13 August 1762.^[574] At that time, the voting class consisted of proprietors, freeman, and their

⁵⁶² Testimony of John K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, consulted through Fold3.com, page 6.

⁵⁶³ Testimony of John K. Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W16,439, consulted through Fold3.com, page 11.

⁵⁶⁴ Hamilton Child, *Gazetteer of Washington County, Vt., 1783–1889*, 2 vols. in 1 (Syracuse, N.Y.: The Syracuse Journal Company, 1889), 1:185.

⁵⁶⁵ S. W. Durant and H. B. Peirce, *History of St. Lawrence Co., New York*, (Philadelphia, Penn.: L. H. Everts, 1878), 199.

⁵⁶⁶ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Providence):249. Edward was also recorded at Rehoboth, but his mother is incorrectly called Charity.

⁵⁶⁷ Edward Thurber in the North Burial Ground, Providence, R.I., aged 71 years; gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Edward Thurber*.

⁵⁶⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Providence):185; Thomas W. Baldwin, *Vital records of Uxbridge, Massachusetts, to the end of the year 1850*, (Boston, MA: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1916), 327.

⁵⁶⁹ Baldwin, *Vital records of Uxbridge, Massachusetts* [note 568], 145.

⁵⁷⁰ Mary Thurber in the North Burial Ground, Providence, R.I., her stone giving her parents Co^{ll} John Spring and Sarah of Uxbridge and her age 23 years and 35 days; gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Mary Thurber*.

⁵⁷¹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Providence):185.

⁵⁷² *Genealogies of Rhode Island Families: From Rhode Island Periodicals*, 2 vols. (Baltimore: Genealogical Pub. Co., 1983), 2:24.

⁵⁷³ Mary Thurber in the North Burial Ground (next to Edward), in the 72d year of her age; gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Mary Thurber*.

⁵⁷⁴ Jane Fletcher Fiske, "Rhode Island Freemen Admitted 1760–1762," *Rhode Island Roots* 12 (1986), 34.

eldest sons. Strangely, this list declares Edward Thurber Jr. to be an eldest son. At the time of his first marriage, Edward was said to be of Rehoboth. His will was made 27 April 1809 and proved 3 July 1809.^[575]

- iii. ELIZABETH THURBER, b. 24 Jan. 1741; d. Providence, 30 Dec. 1819,^[576] m. by 15 March 1780, SAMUEL HILL, b. ca. 1739, d. Providence, 16 Oct. 1822.^[577]
- iv. JAMES THURBER, b. 14 Aug. 1743; d. after Feb. 1794, when he was living at Saratoga, N.Y.,^[578] m. Warwick, 8 Dec. 1765, MARY RICE,^[579] daughter of Randall and Dinah (Greene) Rice,^[580] b. 28 Sept. 1744.^[581]
James removed to Durham, N.Y., around 1769.^[582] He appeared in Easton, N.Y., in the 1790 federal census.^[583]
- v. WILLIAM THURBER, b. 9 Nov. 1745; d. North Providence, 19 April 1828,^[584] m. (1) Providence, 30 Sept. 1772, PATIENCE WILKINSON, reported dau. of David and Mary (Arnold) Wilkinson,^[585] b. ca. 1754 and d. 11 July 1781, bur. at the North Burial Ground, Providence,^[586] m. (2) Rehoboth, 28 Oct. 1784, ANNA BACON,^[587] b. ca. 1754 and d. 10 Oct. 1789,^[588] m. (3) ELIZABETH TABER, b. Providence, 20 April 1780, dau. of Samuel and Abigail Taber, d. Providence, 22 Dec. 1863.^[589] William was called “esquire” when his brother James seemingly sold him land in 1794.

⁵⁷⁵ Providence, Rhode Island, Wills 10:389–90.

⁵⁷⁶ Death announcement, 31 Dec. 1819, *Rhode-Island American, and General Advertiser*, 3, “in the 80th year of her age.”

⁵⁷⁷ Death announcement, 19 Oct. 1822, *Providence Patriot*, 3, in the 84th year of his age.

⁵⁷⁸ Providence, Rhode Island, Deeds [FHL 901,264], 22:520.

⁵⁷⁹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 1 (Warwick):118.

⁵⁸⁰ Cranston, Rhode Island, Council Records [FHL 931,508], 1:308–310. She was named “Mary Thurber” in her father’s 1769 will.

⁵⁸¹ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 1 (Warwick):198.

⁵⁸² A. Edward Thurber, *The Thurber Genealogy*, (privately printed, 1954), 6.

⁵⁸³ “United States Census, 1790,” database with images, FamilySearch.org, entry for James Thurber, Easton, Albany, New York.

⁵⁸⁴ Death announcement, 23 April 1828, *Providence Patriot*, 3.

⁵⁸⁵ Israel Wilkinson, *Memoirs of the Wilkinson Family in America*, (Jacksonville, Ill.: Davis & Penniman, 1869), 141.

⁵⁸⁶ Gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Patience Thurber*, in the 27th year of her age; Death announcement, 30 July 1781, *Pennsylvania Evening Post*, 2.

⁵⁸⁷ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 25], 362.

⁵⁸⁸ Gravestone image, RIHCC, indexed as *Anna Thurber*, in the 36th year of her age; Death announcement, 22 Oct. 1789, *United States Chronicle*, 3.

⁵⁸⁹ Returns of deaths, 1856–1921, City of Providence, [FHL 2,022,789], image 1722 of 1834; birth date from gravestone image on findagrave.com, memorial 33368103.

There was another William Thurber who married Elizabeth Coggeshall, who was about the same age as Elizabeth Taber, and both couples were having children around Providence during the same period. The other, younger William was called “2d” in most records. Several records establish that the elder William was the one who married Elizabeth Taber:

1850 U.S. Census, Cranston, Providence County, Rhode Island, NARA microfilm M432, p.441 (penned) or p.222 (typed), family 692. This household shows the younger William living with his wife Eliza and their daughter Eliza (Thurber) Trowbridge and son Oliver H. P. Thurber.

Francis Bacon Trowbridge, *The Trowbridge Genealogy: History of the Trowbridge Family in America*, (New Haven, Conn.: Tuttle, Morehouse, & Taylor, 1908), 228. Daughter Eliza had married William Henry Trowbridge in 1844, and he was lost at sea the following year. Eliza then married Stephen Colwell at Providence in 1853 with a marriage record that names her father Wm. Thurber.

- vi. NATHANIEL THURBER, b. 1747; d. 1748.^[590]
- vii. MARY THURBER, b. 29 Feb. 1748; d. Providence, 24 Nov. 1815,^[591] m. Providence, 10 Dec. 1769, BENJAMIN ALGER,^[592] b. Swansea, 1 July 1739, son of Preserved and Martha (Tiffany/Pefeny) Alger,^[593] d. Providence, 1 Feb. 1810.^[594]

Administration was granted on Benjamin's estate to the widow Mary Alger on 19 Feb. 1810.^[595] Administration was ongoing when she died, and on 3 August 1820, James Thurber was appointed administrator of both estates.^[596]

17. BENJAMIN⁴ THURBER was born reportedly around 1716.^[597] His parents are unknown, although Y-DNA tests of his descendants prove that he was almost certainly descended from John¹, and from his estimated birth year, he was likely of the 4th generation, but possibly of the third or fifth. Benjamin died reportedly in 1807 and certainly after 8 July 1806, when a death announcement for his wife called her his "consort."

Benjamin married **ELIZABETH HALLET** at Warren, Rhode Island, on 1 November 1747.^[598] She was born circa 1725 and died at Royalton or Barnard, Vermont on 11 June 1806.^[599] The following month a newspaper announced her death, "In Barnard, Elizabeth Thurber, consort of Benjamin Thurber, aged 82."^[600] She was buried at the Powers Cemetery.^[601]

Benjamin and Elizabeth were among the New England "planters" who came to Nova Scotia in the early 1760s to settle after the expulsion of the French

Cranston, R.I., Record of Deaths, 1906–1913 Inclusive [FHL 2,384,563], 6:47. The 1907 death record of Eliza Colwell names her parents William and Eliza (Coggeshall) Thurber. We deduce that the elder William Thurber, who had died before the 1850 census, is the one who married Eliza Taber.

⁵⁹⁰ Joanne E. Martin, *The Thurber Clearinghouse*.

⁵⁹¹ Death announcement, 25 Nov. 1815, *Providence Gazette, and Country Journal*, 3.

⁵⁹² Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 2 (Providence):3.

⁵⁹³ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rehoboth* [note 22], 518. Benjamin is identified as the son of Preserved in his marriage record.

⁵⁹⁴ Death announcement, 3 Feb. 1810, *Columbian Phenix*, 3.

⁵⁹⁵ Providence, Rhode Island, Probate case files, A3990.

⁵⁹⁶ Providence, Rhode Island, Probate case files, A4575.

⁵⁹⁷ Francis Y. Davis, *Genealogy of the Ancestors and Descendants of Captain Francis Davis*, (Dayton, Ohio: Otterbein Press, 1910), 104. This book gives birth and death years reported here for both Benjamin and his wife Elizabeth, with no other known source for corroboration. While Elizabeth's dates correlate with her death records, Davis's book also says that Benjamin's daughter Philena was born at Portsmouth, N.H., and this disagrees with a town record recorded probably by Benjamin probably within 10 years of her birth. Benjamin's son Francis testified to serving during the Revolutionary War as a young teenager, working as his father's "waiter." Part of his testimony states that his father had a family bible that was "now in possession of Francis Davis of Brookfield, Vt." It seems probable that Davis's book took its information from this bible, the whereabouts of which are unknown.

⁵⁹⁸ Arnold, *Vital Record of Rhode Island* [note 22], 6 (Warren):38.

⁵⁹⁹ Guilford, Vt. records, book F:22; citing *General Index to Vital Records of Vermont, early to 1870* [FHL 27,709, image 2655 of 3934].

⁶⁰⁰ *Post-Boy*, Windsor, Vermont, of 8 July 1806.

⁶⁰¹ Gravestone for "Mrs. Elizabeth Wife of Mr. Benjamin Thurber," AE 84 years, image on findagrave.com, memorial 83079938. (Powers Cemetery is very small and near to Royalton Broad Brook Cemetery, which accounts for some sources stating she was buried at the latter.)

following the end of the war with Britain. Benjamin and his family then removed to Saville, New Hampshire, sometime between 1766 and 1770, and then on to Hopkinton, New Hampshire, around the beginning of 1777.^[602] Benjamin then enlisted as a first lieutenant and that summer was at the Battle of Bennington. Through the end of the war and into the 1790s, Benjamin is in the records of several towns in New Hampshire. He seemingly removed to Barnard, Vermont, with his son-in-law and daughter Francis and Philena Matilda (Thurber) Davis around 1794.

A confluence of coincidences has caused much confusion between this Benjamin and with Benjamin⁴ (person 15, child vi). They both lived in Providence in the 1750s. Both obtained land with the planters, the other Benjamin in New Brunswick and this one in Falmouth, Nova Scotia.

(concluded)



⁶⁰² Testimony of Francis Thurber, Revolutionary War Pension File W10,580, pension file for Francis Thurber consulted through Fold3.com, page 9. Several sources document the service of a “Benjamin Thurbour” service as a lieutenant from Saville, but Francis’s testimony proves that he was this Benjamin, Francis’s father. Francis was a young teenager and served as waiter to his father, stating he enlisted while residing at Hopkinton Hills.

New England Articles in Genealogical Journals in 2021

Henry B. Hoff

This annual feature in the *Register* indexes certain genealogical journals nineteen months after the close of the publication year. Not all articles in each journal are included. Some articles are not relevant to New England, some are too general, and others are insufficiently documented.

Listed below are fifteen journals indexed (with abbreviations). Next is an *index* to surnames, places, and some subjects occurring in the titles of articles (or commentary) in these journals in 2021. The index is to the *bibliography* by author that follows; “a&c” is used to indicate additions and corrections to articles since 2000 (only the original author is cited).

Photocopies of articles for personal research can be obtained from AmericanAncestors.org under Expert Help/Get Photocopies.

AA	<i>American Ancestors</i>
CA	<i>Connecticut Ancestry</i>
CN	<i>The Connecticut Nutmegger</i>
MASSOG	<i>MASSOG: A Genealogical Magazine for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts</i>
MD	<i>Mayflower Descendant</i>
MG	<i>The Maine Genealogist</i>
NGSQ	<i>National Genealogical Society Quarterly</i>
NHGR	<i>New Hampshire Genealogical Record</i>
NYGBR	<i>The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record</i>
<i>Register</i>	<i>The New England Historical and Genealogical Register</i>
RIR	<i>Rhode Island Roots</i>
TAG	<i>The American Genealogist</i>
TEG	<i>The Essex Genealogist</i>
TG	<i>The Genealogist</i>
VG	<i>Vermont Genealogy</i>

- 1680 Census: see Hodges
1790 U.S. Census: see Hobbs
1890 U.S. Census: see Haslam
Abbott: see Abbott
African Americans: see Dwyer; Hayden; Meros; Prince
Ballard: see Woollacott
Bartlett: see Bartlett
Baxter: see Vislay
Bell: see Miller; West
Bishop: see Bishop
Boardman: see Arthaud
Booth: see Mindrum
Bouhey: see Battle
Boynton: see Abbott
Brown: see Arthaud
Bullen: see Richardson
Child: see Reagan
Childs: see Hopkins & Frost
Chilton: see Arthaud
Civil War: see Grandchamp; Michelle; Mitchell
Clare: see Ashley
Clark: see Posz; Wood
Clarke: see Bamberg, Cole
Clench: see Streeter
Coggeshall: see Battle
Cole: see Aldrich; Cole
Collier: see Cole
Colman: see Battle
Colson: see Aldrich
Coltrain: see Coltrin
Court of Confiscation: see Dobrick
Coy: see Coy
Cram: see Hill
Cross: see Cross
Cruttenden: see Bartlett
Cushman: see Paulick
Danforth: see Varney
Dart: see Utermohlen
Davis: see Paulick & Davis
De Lannoy/Delano; see English
Dearborn: see Hill
District of Maine: see Kahn
Divorces in Maine: see Davis
DNA: see Chamberlain; Doerfler; Dwyer; Reagan
Doty-Doten: see Merrick
Eastham Town Records: see Burgess
Endecott: see Heffernan
Enigmas #32; see Nathan
Estes/Estey: see Child & Reagan
Fairbanks: see Richardson
Fletcher: see Rahn
French & Indian War
French: see Byrne & Hardy
Gage: see Byrne & Hardy
Gager: see Battle
Gamlin: see West
Genealogist's Handbook: see McClure
Gerrish: see Saxbe
Gile: see Wood
Grimwood: see Bamberg
Groves: see Arthaud
Gurdon: see Battle
Haborne see Hill
Hallock: see Liles
Hardy: see Byrne & Hardy
Harris: see Battle; Harris
Hatch: see Taylor & West
Hathaway: see Corker
Hawes: see Bobertz
Hazen: see Varney
Hewes: see Beatty
Irish: see Powers & Miller; Sterling
Jameson: see Bowen
Jewish: see Call; Murphy & Call; Winer
Keeler: see Mindrum
Kingsbury: see Byrne & Hardy
Lampher: see Bartley; Boumenot
Lebanese: see Rogers & Lester
Leonard: see Arthaud
Lincoln Co., Maine: see Lincoln Co.

- Littlefield: see Eaton & Harris;
 Harris & Eaton
 Lockwood: see McDonald
 Mackworth: see Taylor
 Macy: see Sano
Mayflower: see Arthaud; Arthaud
 & Child; Chilton; Corker; Lan-
 sing; More; Mucia; Natale;
 Priest
 Meakins: see Stott
 Meros: see Dwyer; African Ameri-
 cans
 Miller: see Stott
 Mills: see Ullmann
 Mitchell: see Merrick; Mitchell
 More: see Arthaud
 Native Americans: see Campbell;
 Martin
 Newport, R.I.: see Desrosiers
 Norris: see Battle; Bradley; Cleav-
 er; Norris
 Northfield Church, Fairfield,
 Conn.: see Dempsey
 Nye: see Natale
 Onge: see Chamberlain
 Orphans: see Dwyer
 Page: see Chamberlain
 Parmelee: see Green
 Payson: see Dearborn
 Pelham: see Battle
 Porter: see Battrick
 Portsmouth, N.H.: see Furniss
 Portuguese: see Lucey
 Probate: see McClure
 Revolutionary War: see Drew; Hal-
 lock; Hayden; Merrick; Roselli;
 Streeter
 Richmond: see Corker
 Rickard: see Rahn
 Robinson: see Hubbard
 Royalton, N.Y.: see Leppman
 Saltonstall: see Battle
 Sanborn: see Stott
 Seen Elsewhere: see Bartley; Hoff
 Sherwood: see Chamberlain
 Simmons: see Abbott
 Small: see Frank
 Smith: see Le Bel
 South Hero and Grand Isle, Vt.: see
 Howard
 Sperry: see Posz
 Stevens: see Davis
 Stiles: see Jackson
 Streeter: see Roselli
 Tilden: see Tilden
 Tolman: see Shaw
 Truro Town Records: see Burgess
 Tybbot: see Ashley
 Vermont Families in 1791: see
 Bishop
 Vermont Families in 1791: see
 Howard
 Wade: see Arthaud; Mucia
 Waldegrave: see Battle
 Wallis: see Hollick; Varney
 Wells: see Handler
 Wentworth: see Booth
 Wheelwright: see Hill
 White: see Allan, Johnson & Neal
 Wing: see Childs
 Wolcott: see Natale
 Woodbury: see Dearborn & Ar-
 thaud
 Woodmansey: see Battle
 Woods: see Beatty

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Abbott Patricia A. "The Daughters of Elizabeth Boynton and John Simmons of Rowley and Bradford, Massachusetts," *TEG* 41:3 (August 2021):149–154.
- Aldrich, Paul M. "Phebe Cole, Wife of Abner Colson of Frankfort (now Winterport), Maine," *MG* 43:2 (May 2021):68–81.
- Allan, Sue, Caleb Johnson, and Simon Neal. "The Excommunication of *Mayflower* Passenger William White and His Half-Siblings Henry and Jacomine May, at Wisbech, Cambridgeshire," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):101–103.
- Arthaud, John Bradley, and Christopher Challender Child. "John and Phebe (Leonard) Wade of Granville, Nova Scotia: Descendants of James Chilton and Richard More," *MD* 69:2 (Summer 2021):163–164.
- Arthaud, John Bradley, "Nathan⁵ and Abigail (Boardman) Brown of Ipswich, Massachusetts: More Descendants of Richard More of the *Mayflower*." *TAG* 92:2 (July/October 2021):93–104.
- Arthaud, John Bradley. "The Nicholas Groves Family of Essex County, Massachusetts," *TEG* 41:2 (May 2021):77–88; 41:3 (August 2021):133–146.
- Ashley, Chase W. "New Research on the Origin and Parentage of Aquila and Thomas Chase," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):33–41.
- Ashley, Chase W. "The English Origins of Walter Tybbot of Gloucester, Massachusetts, and His Wives and Daughters," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):330–341.
- Bamberg, Cherry Fletcher. "In Search of James Clarke, Jr." *RIR* 47:1 (March 2021):37–53.
- Bamberg, Cherry Fletcher. "The Short Life and Sad Death of Samuel H. Grimwood," *RIR* 47:3 (September 2021):131–158.
- Bartlett, Gary A. "Refuting Misinformation on George and Mary (Crutten-den) Bartlett of Guilford, Connecticut," *CN* 53:3 (March 2021):212–222.
- Bartlett, Scott Andrew. "The Tilden Family of Lebanon, New Hampshire," *NHGR* 33:2 (Spring 2021):3–34.
- Bartley, Scott Andrew, and Diane MacLean Boumenot. "Sorting Out Several Daniel Lampher Men," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):139–147.
- Bartley, Scott Andrew. "Seen Elsewhere," *MD* 69:1 (Winter 2021):103–104.
- Bartley, Scott Andrew. "Seen Elsewhere in 2020," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):191.
- Battick, Nancy C. "Empowering Sarah: The Will of Asa Porter of Hampden, Maine," *MG* 43:4 (November 2021):153–160.
- Battle, Robert. "Notes on the Family of William¹ Gager of Little Waldingfield, Suffolk, and Charlestown and Boston, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:3 (Summer 2021):231–237.
- Battle, Robert. "Some English Records of Robert¹ Woodmansey, Schoolmaster of Boston, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):345–347.
- Battle, Robert. "The Colman and Cutler Ancestry of John¹ Thorndike of Essex County, Massachusetts, with the Colman Ancestry of John¹ Cogge-

- shall, Muriel¹ (Gurdon) Saltonstall, and Jemima¹ (Waldegrave) Pelham,” *Register* 175:2 (Winter 2021):79–93; 175:2 (Spring 2021):180–192, 175:2 (Summer 2021):247–268.
- Battle, Robert. “The Wives of Rev. Francis¹ Boughey, Father of Elizabeth¹ (Boughey) Harris of Roxbury and Muddy River, Massachusetts,” *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):343–344.
- Beatty, John D. “Richard and Hannah (Hewes?) Woods of Roxbury, Massachusetts, and Some of Their Descendants,” *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):120–131.
- Bishop, William Paul. “Vermont Families in 1791: Daniel Bishop of Richmond, Vermont,” *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):135–149.
- Bobertz, Margaret. “Two Edmund Haweses of Yarmouth Who Both Marry an Abigail, MD 69:2 (Summer 2021):133–136.
- Booth, Terry J. “The Sothill, Fauconberge, and Greystoke Ancestry of William¹ Wentworth of New Hampshire,” *TAG* 92:2 (July/October 2021), 81–92.
- Bowen, Judith A. “Charles Sumner Jameson Had Four Wives,” *CN* 53:3 (March 2021):223–230.
- Bradley, Hal, Steven D. Norris, Lynne Cleaver, and Robert Battle. “The Two Wives of Rev. Edward¹ Norris of Salem, Massachusetts,” *TAG* 92:1 (January/April 2021):17–27.
- Burgess, Peter. “Eastham and Truro [Mass.] Town Records, 1671–1783,” *MD* 69:1 (Winter 2021):81–101; and 69:2 (Summer 2021):170–177.
- Byrne, Melinde Lutz, and John Edward Hardy. “Three French Daughters and Their Husbands: Three Unrecorded Marriages from Early Ipswich, Massachusetts: Amy (French) Gage, Susan (French) Kingsbury, and Anne (French) Hardy,” *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):104–119.
- Call, Stephanie. “Max Winer and the Founding of Congregation Sons of Jacob,” *AA* 22:2 (Summer 2001):60–62.
- Campbell, Sara. “To Indian Territory and Back Again. The Family of Reverend Simon Leavitt Hobbs of Erving, Massachusetts,” *MASSOG* 45:2 (2021):41–51.
- Chamberlain, Gene. “Evidence for Identifying Mary Onge, daughter of Edmund^A Page of Lavenham, Suffolk, England, as the Second Wife of Thomas Sherwood of Wethersfield and Fairfield, Connecticut,” *CA* 63:4 (May 2021):105–110.
- Chamberlain, Gene. “Update on Y-DNA Tests for Connecting or Distinguishing Thomas Sherwood of Fairfield and Thomas Sherwood of Stratford.” *CA* 63:4 (May 2021):111–112.
- Child, Christopher Challender, and Donald Christopher Reagan. “Daniel Estes/Estey [Jr.] of Berwick, Maine, and Miramachi, New Brunswick,” *MG* 43:2 (May 2021):82–87.
- Childs, Gregory S. “A Belated Family Reunion: Additional Children of Peter Hopkins of Franklin Plantation, Maine, and the Parentage of His Wife, Unity Frost,” *MG* 43:1 (February 2021):3–13.

- Childs, Gregory S. "The Parentage of Louisa (Prescott) Wing, Wife of Stephen Landers Wing of Franklin Plantation, Maine," *MG* 43:2 (May 2021):51–67.
- Cole, William E. "Jane Clarke: A Strong Woman: The English Origins of William Collier's Wife." *MD* 69:1 (Winter 2021):45–60.
- Cole, William E. "The English Origins of Job, John, Daniel, and Ruth Cole." *MD* 69:1 (Winter 2021):30–44.
- Collins, Michael. "Reuben, Catherine, and Henry Corey, From Rhode Island to Canada," *RIR* 47:1 (March 2021):3–16.
- Coltrin, Dorothy. "John Coltrain (1740–before 1807) of New England and New York," *CN* 54 (Fall 2021):48–54.
- Corker, Ryan James. "Finding Hannah Richmond, Second Wife of Thomas Hathaway: Continuation of a Thomas Rogers Line and the Westward Removal of a Hathaway Family to the Berkshires," *MD* 69:2 (Summer 2021):109–125.
- Coy, Cynthia Lynn. "The David Coy Family of Oneida County, New York, Does Not Include Deborah, Wife of Ephraim," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):57–58.
- Cross, Denise E. "Establishing the Identity of Josiah Cross and Edgecomb, Vassalboro, Northport, and Detroit, Maine," *MG* 43:3 (August 2021):99–108.
- Cross, Denise E. "From French Merchant Marine to Civil War Soldier: The Life of Peter Mitchell of New Haven, Connecticut, Born Pierre Michelle, of Placy Montague, La Manche, France," *CN* 54 (Fall 2021):38–46.
- Cross, Denise E. "Identifying the Children of Josiah Cross of Edgecomb, Vassalboro, Northport, and Detroit, Maine," *MG* 43:4 (November 2021):165–170.
- Davis, Rick. "Carrie (Stevens) (Sanborn) (Norwood) (Ryan) Hall, and Her Daughter Ella (Stevens) (Forbes) (Seamon) (Overlock) (Joki) Koski: Divorce in Maine in the Late Nineteenth and Early Twentieth Centuries," *MG* 43:3 (August 2021):123–135.
- Dearborn, David C. and John Bradley Arthaud. "William¹ Woodbury of Salem and Beverly, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:3 (Summer 2021):207–222; 175:4 (Fall:2021):348–360.
- Dearborn, Maureen Markt. "Four Contemporary Men Named Joseph Payson in Massachusetts in 1773," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):135–139.
- Dempsey, Barbara. "Records of the Northfield Church, 1757–1879, Marriages," *CA* 63:4 (May 2021):113–133.
- Desrosiers, Marian Mathison. "The Mill Street Schoolhouse in Newport," *RIR* 47:2 (June 2021):79–89.
- Dobrick, Mariessa. "Genealogy Gem in the State Archives: Court of Confiscation," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):178–181.
- Dwyer, Michael F. "Meros of Woodstock and Derby, Vermont: A Network of Free Black Families," *VG* 26:1 (Spring 2021):1–29.

- Dwyer, Michael F. "Mitochondrial Lines: Daughters of Rachel and Mary Riggs of Falmouth, Maine," *MG* 43:4 (November 2021):147–152.
- Dwyer, Michael. "Louise (Mercure) Smith, of Waterbury, Vermont: An Orphan's Lost Heritage," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):150–164.
- Eaton, Priscilla, and Valerie Harris. "Recollections of 'Aunt Rachel' Establish the Family of William Littlefield of Frankfort, Maine," *MG* 43:1 (February 2021):33–38.
- English, George. "Ancestry and History of Philip Delano, Born Philippe de Lannoy: Further Findings about the de Lannoy and Mahieu Families," *MD* 69:1 (Winter 2021):5–29.
- Frank, Thomas W. "Small Additions: Isaac and Susanna (Hobbs) Small of Gray, Maine," *MG* 43:3 (August 2021):109–122; 43:4 (November 2021):165–170.
- Furniss, Sean. "Portsmouth, New Hampshire, Warnings Out of Town, 1722/3–1769," *NHGR* 33:1 (Winter 2021):75–8T4.
- Gardner, Carole. "Theophilus Drew. A New Hampshire Revolutionary War Soldier Whose Widow Moved to Caledonia, Vermont," *NHGR* 33:2 (Spring 2021):35–51.
- Grandchamp, Robert. "A New Account of the Battle of Fredericksburg," *RIR* 47:1 (March 2021):19–38.
- Grandchamp, Robert. "The Numbers Game: The Curious Numbering of Rhode Island Civil War Units," *RIR* 47:2 (June 2021):91–101.
- Green, Shannon. "Incorrect and Incomplete: Mark Parmelee and Ruth Brown of Connecticut," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):298–305.
- Handler, Elizabeth Pyle. "Thomas Goodwin Wells of Boston, Suffolk County, Massachusetts, and the California Gold Rush," *MASSOG* 45:1 (2021):3–20.
- Harris, Gale Ion. "Daniel¹ Harris of Newbury, Massachusetts," *TAG* 92:2 (July/October 2021):137–139.
- Harris, Gale Ion. "Robert¹Harris of Roxbury and Muddy River, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):48–56.
- Harris, Valerie, and Priscilla Eaton. "The Funeral of Rhoda Littlefield of Frankfort, Maine," *MG* 43:1 (February 2021):25–32.
- Hayden, Avis Conley. "Widow Lucy Terry Prince and Her Heirs of Sunderland, Vermont," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):99–112 [African Americans].
- Heffernan, James. "Update to the Ancestry of Gov. John Endecott (ca. 1588–1664/5)," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):132–134.
- Hill, Ronald A. "Early Cram, Dearborn, Haborne, and Wheelwright Records from Lincolnshire Vetted and Corrected," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):45–47.
- Hobbs, Laura Cowles. "John Markham of Chatham, Middlesex County, Connecticut, in the 1790 U.S. Census," *CN* 53:3 (March 2021):194–211.
- Hodges, Margaret. "A 1680 Census for Sandy Beach and Little Harbor, New Hampshire," *NHGR* 33:1 (Winter 2021):69–74.

- Hollick, Martin E. "George Wallis of Little Harbor in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and His Descendants for Several Generations," *NHGR* 33:1 (Winter 2021):3–20.
- Howard, Diantha. "Vermont Families in 1791: John and Nathaniel Waldron of Hartland, Vermont," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):113–134.
- Howard, Diantha. "More Early Members of the Congregational Church of South Hero (and Grand Isle)," *VG* 26:1 (Spring 2021):30–38.
- Hubbard, Edward G. "Finding the Roots of Jonathan Robinson of York, and Sanford Maine," *MG* 43:2 (May 2021):93–96.
- Jackson, B. Darrell. "Notes on the Stiles Family of Millbrook, Bedfordshire, and Windsor, Connecticut," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):154–159.
- Kahn, Richard, and Patricia. "Jeremiah Barker & Diseases in the District of Maine, 1772–1820," *AA* 22:2 (Summer 2001):24–29.
- Lansing, Deborah Wentworth. "Phebe Harlow, Wife of Edward Stephens of Plympton, Massachusetts," *A Double Richard Warren Line*, *MD* 69:2 (Summer 2021):245–151.
- Lansing, Deborah Wentworth. "The Children of George and Phebe (Stephens) Ellis of Plymouth, Massachusetts: A Henry Samson, John Howland, and Richard Warren Line," *MD* 69:2 (Summer 2021):152–162.
- Le Bel, Stephen. "'Dear Mamie': The Family of David B. Smith of York County, Maine," *MG* 43:1 (February 2021):14–24.
- LeDour, Olivier. "To America and Back: The Sojourns of Job Daouphars," *AA* 22:1 (Spring 2021):35–40.
- Leppman, John A. "Marriages Performed by Rudolphus Dewey of Royalton, New York, 1812–1829," *VG* 26:2 (Spring 2021):182–184.
- Liles, Valerie. "Identifying the Southold Families of Israel and Zebulon Hallock as 1776 Refugees from Long Island to Connecticut," *NYGBR* 152:3 (July 2021):185–191.
- "Lincoln County, Maine, Wills Abstracts, 1800–1830." *MG* 43:1 (February 2021):36–48; 43:2 (May 2021):95–96; (May 2021):246–144; (November 2021):184–192.
- Lucey, Judith. "Portuguese American Manuscript Resources in the R. Stanton Avery Special Collections," *AA* 22:3 (Fall 2021):49–51.
- Mahler, Leslie. "Additions to the Ancestry of Bennett Harrison, Wife of Thomas¹ Call of Charlestown, Massachusetts," *TAG* 92:2 (July/October 2021):119–134.
- Mahler, Leslie. "Margaret Abbott, Wife of John¹ Warren of Watertown, and Sister of George¹ Abbott of Rowley, Massachusetts," *TAG* 92:1 (January/April 2021):63–64.
- Martin, George. "The First Peoples of Dudley, Massachusetts–Nipmuc and English." *MASSOG* 45:1 (2021):21–34 (2021); 45:2 (2021):63–74; 45:3 (2021) 96–104.
- McClure, Rhonda R. "Working with Probate New England Style," *AA* 22:3 (Fall 2001):31–58.

- McClure, Rhonda R., and Cécile Engeln. "Introducing the Sixth Genealogist's Handbook for New England Research," AA 22:3 (Fall 2021):28–30.
- McDonald, Capers W. "Theophilus⁵ Lockwood of Connecticut and New York State, Son of Theophilus⁴ and Hannah (Close) Lockwood of Cos Cob, Greenwich, Connecticut," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):59–67.
- Merrick, Barbara Lambert. "Doty-Doten Data," MD 69:2 (Summer 2021):126–132.
- Merrick, Barbara Lambert. "Review of the Family of Experience Mitchell," MD 69:1 (Winter 2021):61–64.
- Merrick, Pauline C. "The Building of the Continental Frigate Confederacy: A List of Names of Workers CN 54 (Fall 2021):34–37.
- Mindrum, Thomas L. "Ralph Keeler and England and Hartford and Norwalk, Connecticut, His Son John of Hartford and Norwalk, and Grandson David Keeler of Norwalk and Wilton," CA 63:3 (February 2021):91–103.
- Mindrum, Thomas L. "Richard Booth of England and Stratford, Connecticut, and His Son Ephraim Booth of Stratford," CA 63:3 (February 2021):86–90.
- Mucia, Bonnie Wade. "John Wade of Massachusetts and John Wade of Nova Scotia: Are They the Same Man?" MD 69:1 (Winter 2021):65–70.
- Natale, Marian Bowers. "Asa Nye Bodfish Armington Nye: Seven Lines of Descent from John and Elizabeth (Tilley) Howland," MD 69:2 (Summer 2021):141–146.
- Natale, Marian Bowers. "Content Howes/Hawes Branch, Wife of Peter Branch [Jr.] of Preston, Connecticut: A John Howland Line," MD 69:2 (Summer 2021):137–140.
- Natale, Marian Bowers. "The New England Ancestry of Reuben Wolcott of Delaware and Virginia," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):179–173.
- Nathan, Jared James, and Nathaniel Lane Taylor. "Enigma #32 Mary (____) (Veren) Putnam and Elizabeth (____) Ingersoll, Sisters, of Salem, Massachusetts," TAG 92:1 (January/April 2021):66–71.
- Haslam, Patricia J. "Reconstructing the 1890 Census, Johnson, Lamoille," VG 26:2 (Spring 2021):165–177.
- Paulick, Michael R. "A Glimpse into the Early Life of Pilgrim Sara (Reader) Cushman from Lenham, Kent, 1585–1616," AA 22:2 (Spring 2001):50–52.
- Paulick, Michael R., and Dr. Frank "Mike" Davis. "Dolor and Margery (Willard) Davis: New Discoveries in England," RIR 47:4 (December 2021):193–198.
- Posz, Darcie Hind. "Na Keiki Kâne a: Sereno Clark and Nettie A. (Alling) Sperry of New Haven, Connecticut," CN 54 (Fall 2021):23–33.
- Priest, Degory. "Obstinate Brownist" of London: A Clue to the Origins of the *Mayflower* Passenger," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):293–297.
- Rahn, Russell A. "Business Ledgers Can Document Community Presence: The Family of Andrew Fletcher of Westford, Massachusetts," MASSOG 45:2 (2021):59–62.

- Rahn, Russell A. "Fitting Together All the Items in a Collection: The Family of John and Jemima (Buchanan) Rickard of Essex County, Massachusetts," *MASSOG* 45:1 (2021):11–17.
- Reagan, Donald Christopher. "Finding My Only Colonial New England Line: An Estey DNA Study," *AA*:2 (Summer 2001):54–55.
- Richardson, Letitia DeVillar. "Identifying Grace³ Fairbanks as the wife of Ephraim Bullen," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):167–169.
- Rogers, Molly, and Thomas Lester. "From Lebanon to Boston: Two Families Make a New Home," *AA* 22:4 (Winter 2021):49–43.
- Roselli, Robert J. "Three Men Named Benjamin Streeter: Unraveling Records from the Post-Revolutionary War Period," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):320–329.
- Sano, Carolyn. "The Search for Anne Sullivan Macy's Sister Mary," *CN* 53:3 (March 2021):231–240.
- Saxbe, William B. Jr. "Additions and Corrections: Alice (Cary) Briggs, Reconsidered," *RIR* 47:3 (September 2021):159–163.
- Saxbe, William B. Jr. "Sarah (Gerrish) King (1714–1798) of Salem, Massachusetts, and His Descent from Nine Puritan Ministers," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):19–31.
- Shaw, Helen A. "The Correct Death Date for Isaiah Tolman of Thomaston and Matinicus Island, Maine," *MG* 43:4 (November 2021):161–163.
- Sterling, John E. "Rhode Island Gravestones of Irish Immigrants (A–B)," *RIR* 47:3 (September 2021):113–140; 37:3:199–222.
- Stevens, Nancy R. "Rev. Joseph Gerrish's Wenham, Massachusetts, Congregation:1710 Communicants," *Register* 175:3 (Summer 2021):238–240.
- Stevens, Nancy R. "The Reverend Joseph Gerrish's Wenham, Massachusetts, Congregation: Dating the Record of Communicants," *TG* 35:1 (Spring 2021):96–99.
- Stott, Clifford L. "The Ancestry of Sarah Meakins, Wife of Thomas³ Miller of Springfield, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):148–153.
- Stott, Clifford L. "The English Ancestry and Royal Descent of John, Stephen, and William Sanborn of Hampton, New Hampshire," *TAG* 92:1 (January/April 2021):1–16; *TAG* 92:2 (July/October 2021):125–136.
- Stott, Clifford L. "The English Ancestry of Thomas¹ Bell and His Sister Sarah (Bell) Meakins, Wife of Thomas² Meakins of Roxbury, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:3 (Summer 2021):223–230.
- Streeter, Perry. "Thomasine (Clench) Frost of the Great Migration: Her Probable Correct Origins in Colchester, Essex," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):3–18.
- Streeter, Perry. "William Hills of the Great Migration: Probable Origins in Upminster, Essex," *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):174.
- Taylor, Edward R. and Randy A. West. "Updates to the Ancestry of Brothers¹ and William¹ Hatch of Scituate, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):68–78.

- Taylor, Nathaniel Lane. "The Mackworths of Shropshire: Royal Ancestry and Colonial Descendants," *TG* 35:1 (Spring 2021):100–126; *TG* 35:2 (Fall 2021):157–191.
- Ullmann, Helen Schatvet. "Samuel Mills of Dedham, Massachusetts, and His Descendants," *Register* 175:4 (Fall 2021):306–319.
- Ullmann, Helen Schatvet. "The First Generations of John Mills of Braintree, Massachusetts, and His Descendants," *Register* 175:3 (Summer 2021):197–206.
- Utermohlen, William J. "The Elfinda Factor: Finding the Family of Abigail C. Dart," *NYGBR* 152:3 (July 2021):165–184.
- Varney, George W. "Silas Hazen and Denison Danforth: Brothers of the Northeast Kingdom, Vermont, and the Eastern Townships, Québec," *VG* 26:1 (Spring 2021):39–74; 26:2 (Spring 2021):185–190.
- Varney, George W. "David Wallis, Cooper, of Townsend, Massachusetts; Sullivan and Unity, New Hampshire; and Compton, Lower Canada (Part 2; with additions and corrections), 33:1 (Winter 2021):21–68.
- Vislay, Cheryl. "Discovering Elijah Baxter: Rhode Island's Charismatic, Whimsical, and Forgotten Gilded Age Artist," *RIR* 47:4 (December 2021):171–192.
- West Randy A. "The Probable English Origin of Robert¹ Gamlin of Roxbury and Concord, Massachusetts," *Register* 175:1 (Winter 2021):42–43.
- West, Randy A. "The English Marriages of Two Daughters of Thomas¹ Bell of Roxbury, Massachusetts," *TAG* 92:1 (January/April 2021):65–66.
- White, Linda Crichlow. "Treasures Among the Clutter: My Family History Awakening," *AA* 22:2 (Summer 2001):40–43 [African Americans].
- Wilson, Keith Edward. "French and Indian War Diary of Daniel Sizer," *CN* 54 (Fall 2021):2–22.
- Wood, Derek Doran. "The Second Wife of Moses Gile of Hamstead, New Hampshire. Which Mary Clark? *Register* 175:2 (Spring 2021):160–166; 175:3 (Summer 2021):241–246.
- Woollacott, Alfred III. "The Ballad of Sanford Ballard," *MASSOG* 45:3 (2021) 79–91.

The Rotches and the Rodmans

A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism

Rhonda R. McClure

Project Origins and Support

Originating as a research project, the story of the Rotches and the Rodmans evolved into a four-part, extended tale that was supported by a generous contribution from Marc Chardon. The four articles* are:

Part 1 — Quakers in New England

Part 2 — Rotch and Rodman Families

Part 3 — “New Lights” vs. Old Lights

Part 4 — The Fall Out

The original work on these families began as a research project to verify a maternal line that had been taken back to Emily Morgan, daughter of Charles Waln and Sarah (Rodman) Morgan. Emily was born 13 December 1821 in New Bedford, Bristol County, Massachusetts, and had married there 24 May 1842 William J. Rotch.^[1] In reviewing the abstracted marriage record, the couple were married in the First Congregational Church; however, it was well known that the Rotches and Rodmans were early Massachusetts Quaker families. Had Emily Morgan and/or William J. Rotch left the Society of Friends? If so, was there a way to identify what had happened? And what did that mean to their families?

Part 1 — Quakers in New England

Beginnings of the Society of Friends

While most think of William Penn and Pennsylvania when the Quakers are mentioned, the Society of Friends, more commonly referred to as the Quakers, trace back to the mid 1600s and George Fox of England. Fox is considered the founder of the Society of Friends. After seeking insight from non-con-

* The author wishes to thank Caroline White, Archives & Manuscript Librarian, Robert S. Cox Special Collections and University Archives Research Center, University of Massachusetts, Amherst; Jordan Landes, Curator, Friends Historical Library, Swarthmore College; Jody Goodman, Special Collections Librarian, Special Collections|History Room, New Bedford Free Public Library; Mark D. Procknik, Librarian, Grimshaw-Gudewicz Reading Room, New Bedford Whaling Museum; and Paul O’Pecko, Vice President of Collections and Research, Mystic Seaport.

¹ *Vital Records of New Bedford Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 3 vols. (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1932), vol. 1, p. 332 (birth); vol. 2, p. 377 (marriage).

formist groups such as the Puritans and other separatist groups in and around London, he began to preach in Nottinghamshire and Leicestershire among the separatists there. He was first jailed at Derby in 1650–51 and during the next fifteen years he would be jailed another six times in response to the religious teachings he was sharing around the United Kingdom.^[2] He would ultimately visit the American Colonies, having stopped first at Barbados and Jamaica as well as around the Chesapeake Bay in 1671.

Many may be surprised by the embracing of the Society of Friends in New England, as most researchers think of New England as having strongly discouraged any faiths other than the Puritan faith which had begun to cement itself in Massachusetts Bay Colony and from which the Congregational Church evolved. This is certainly true. Boston and other towns in Massachusetts Bay considered the “Children of the Light,” a name borrowed from their seeking of an inner light, were considered heretics and anyone caught attending a Quaker worship service was arrested and fined. Quaker books found in anyone’s home were burned and the residents arrested and punished. Rhode Island, however, was considered a province of religious tolerance, which perhaps explains the first meeting having been held there.

After Charles II was restored to the throne in England in 1660, after the years of Oliver Cromwell’s Commonwealth and Protectorate, he insisted that Massachusetts Bay stop persecuting those of religious differences. Massachusetts Bay Colony responded by releasing the Quakers they had jailed in Boston and cart-whipping them (a punishment, used in place of hanging for lesser offences, in which a person was tied to the tail of a cart and whipped by the common executioner for a specified distance) until they crossed the Rhode Island border. It was in Rhode Island where the Quakers had their first annual session in 1661, which is said to have founded the New England Yearly Meeting.^[3] Fox arrived in Rhode Island in May 1672 and Quakers and non-Quakers came to hear him preach.

Origins of Rodman and Rotch Families

While researching the Rotch and Rodman families, it seemed desirable to trace the families back to the progenitors of each family in New England. Though it was known that the families were staunch Quakers by the time they were living in New Bedford, for the purposes of answering the question of why Emily Morgan was not married in the faith in 1842, it was important to understand when they had joined.

The Society of Friends and their beliefs had traveled to Ireland at least by 1653 and had shown up in New Ross (County Wexford, Ireland) where John Rodman, patriarch of the Rodman family that would ultimately settle in New Bedford, was punished by the Court of Assizes there in 1655 for refusing to

² Hugh Barbour and J. William Frost, *The Quakers*, Kindle edition (New York: Greenwood Press, 1988), location 4491 of 5569.

³ Sunny Jane Morton and Harold A. Henderson, *How to Find Your Family History in U.S. Church Records: A Genealogist’s Guide* (Baltimore, Md.: Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc., 2019), p. 115.

remove his hat in court.^[4] He was committed to jail for three months and then banished from Ireland. Rodman's refusal to remove his cap showed that he was a Quaker. Friends believed that all men were equal and as such it was not necessary to remove one's hat in deference—not even to royalty.^[5]

John Rodman appears to have removed to Barbados where he died between 16 September and 4 December 1686, the writing and proving of his will. His eldest son, Thomas, born 26 December 1640, would immigrate to Newport, Rhode Island in 1675 with William Edmundson, another Quaker. Once in Newport, Thomas Rodman became a prominent member of the Society of Friends, serving in capacities for the monthly, quarterly, and yearly meetings of Rhode Island for 30 years.^[6] From this it became clear that the Rodmans were members of the Society of Friends from the earliest of years in Great Britain and were highly regarded within their various meetings.

Meanwhile, the origins of the Rotch family are not as clearly defined. The earliest man in America of that surname is William Rotch. He is suspected as having been born about 1650^[7] and resided in Salem, Massachusetts, where he was admitted as an inhabitant of the town 28 January 1683/4.^[8] He married Hannah Potter before 1692.^[9] He and Hannah were the parents of six children (three sons and three daughters). He died likely in Salem, by 28 June 1705 when his widow is found on a bond to administer his estate.^[10]

Her subsequent marriage to Daniel Darling at Salem, 17 April 1717,^[11] and their granting of land in Salem to her son William Roach of “Cape Cod” in 1718 connects her to the progeniture as well as to the Rotches of Cape Cod and Nantucket. In the deed between Daniel Darlin <sic> and Hannah his wife “who is one of the y^e Daughters of Nicholas Potter late of Salem afores^d, Bricklayer and Mary his wife decd . . . ,” they give to William Roth of Cape Cod “for natural love and affection.” The deed further mentions that William Roth [Rotch] is to pay his brothers Benjamin and Joseph the sum of “twenty four

⁴ John Ruttly, *A History of the Rise and Progress of the People Called Quakers, in Ireland, from the Year 1653 to 1700*, 2nd ed. (London: William Phillips, 1800), p. 344.

⁵ Margery Post Abbott, et. al., *Historical Dictionary of the Friends (Quakers)* (Lanham, Md.: The Scarecrow Press, Inc., 2003), p. 127.

⁶ Charles Henry Jones, *Genealogy of the Rodman Family, 1620 to 1886* (Philadelphia, Penn.: Allen, Lane & Scott, 1886), p. 10.

⁷ William Roache/Rotch, Marriage, *New England Marriages to 1700* (Online database. *AmericanAncestors.org*. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2008.) Originally published as: *New England Marriages Prior to 1700*. Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2015, vol. 2 p. 1280.

⁸ Sidney Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. (Salem, Mass.: S. Perley, 1924–1928), vol. 3, p. 184.

⁹ *Vital Records of Salem Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1924), vol. 4, p. 259.

¹⁰ William Roche, 1705, Estate Packet, no. 23944, Essex County, Massachusetts, Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, Archives and Records Preservation, Boston, Massachusetts, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

¹¹ *Vital Records of Salem Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, 6 vols. (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1924), vol. 4, p. 259.

pounds Current money.”^[12] The land in question was in Lot 20, also known as Salem Neck, at Pigdon’s Point.

The mention of Hannah’s parents in the deed would support that she and her family were in Massachusetts at the time she married William Rotch. However, Daniel F. Secomb states that William and Hannah and the family came from Salisbury, England in 1710.^[13] This seems unlikely though as Secomb appears to have merged William who died in 1705 with his son William who went to Cape Cod. The elder William Rotch can be placed Salem in by 1683/4—the same William Rotch whose land was then deeded by his widow to their son.

Of the three sons of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch, William, to whom the land was transferred, was the oldest. According to Sidney Perley in *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, William was born 12 August 1692.^[14] In 1718 he had removed to Truro in Cape Cod where he was first a tanner and then by 1723 a whale fisherman, when he sold the Salem land to Benjamin Ives, 25 September 1723.^[15] William is said to have married Dinah _____ first, the marriage date and place unknown. His second wife, Mary Kingman, he married 1 September 1740 at Middleborough, Massachusetts. According to the entry, they were married by a Justice of the Peace.^[16] This would imply that William Roach was not a Quaker.

Next oldest appears to be Benjamin, though he is not mentioned in Sidney Perley’s *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*. He is definitely a brother of William Rotch to whom the Salem land was deeded.^[17] It is thought he was born in Salem about 1702. His son William was appointed administrator of Benjamin’s estate 26 May 1758 in which he identified his “late father, Benjamin Rotch late of Boston . . . Mariner . . .”^[18] In John M. Bullard’s *The Rotches*, he identifies Benjamin’s widow as “Martha (Paine?) Rotch.”^[19] It is possible that her name is Martha Howes, as there was a Benjamin [*sic*] Rotch who married a Martha Howes in Yarmouth, Massachusetts, likely in 1724 or 1725.^[20] If this

¹² Essex County, Massachusetts, Deeds, vol. 33, p. 217, Essex County Courthouse, Salem, Massachusetts, digitized on FamilySearch.org.

¹³ Daniel F. Secomb *History of the Town of Amherst, Hillsborough County, New Hampshire* (Concord, N.H.: Printed by Evans, Sleeper & Woodbury, 1883), p. 750.

¹⁴ Sidney Perley, *The History of Salem, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. (Salem, Mass.: S. Perley, 1924–1928), vol. 3, p. 184.

¹⁵ Sidney Perley, “Salem in 1700. No. 20,” *The Essex Antiquarian* (1905), vol. IX, p. 118, citing Essex County, Massachusetts Deeds, vol. 43, p. 16.

¹⁶ Barbara Lambert Merrick and Alicia Crane Williams, *Middleborough, Massachusetts Vital Records*, 2 vols. (Boston: Society of Mayflower Descendants, 1986–1990), vol. 1, p.64.

¹⁷ Essex County, Massachusetts, Deeds, vol. 33, p. 217, Essex County Courthouse, Salem, Massachusetts, digitized on FamilySearch.org.

¹⁸ Benjamin Rotch, Estate File, 1758, no. 11787, *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers*. Online database. *AmericanAncestors.org*. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017–2019. (From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org).

¹⁹ John M. Bullard, *The Rotches* (New Bedford, Mass.: n.p., 1947), p. 546.

²⁰ Robert M. Sherman and Ruth Wilder Sherman, *Vital Records of Yarmouth, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Rhode Island: Society of Mayflower Descendants in the State of Rhode Island, 1975) vol. 1, p. 144. *The marriage, conducted by Danil Greenleaf, Clark, was recorded between a marriage he conducted 26 November 1724 and one he conducted 21 October 1725.*

is Benjamin's marriage, again it would suggest that he also was not a member of the Society of Friends.

Only Joseph, the youngest, son of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch that records show, joined the Society of Friends. Joseph married Love Macy, according to the proceedings of the Society of Friends at Nantucket, "this Twenty first Day of y^e Twelveth Month called February" 1733/4.^[21] The marriage certificate identified Joseph as "the Son of William Rotch & Hannah his Wife of Salem in y^e Province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England Deceased." It is actually this record that helps to negate the supposition claimed by Daniel F. Secomb as to the origins of the Rotches, since Secomb indicated that Joseph's father was still alive and living in Provincetown, Massachusetts in 1743.^[22]

Though the Rotches do not appear to have become members of the Society of Friends until perhaps 1733, once part of the Children of Light they served in many respected positions. Ultimately the Rodmans and the Rotches would intermarry when Joseph Rotch's granddaughter, Elizabeth Rotch, married Samuel Rodman in Nantucket, Massachusetts, "first day of the 6th month" 1780.^[23] Eighteen years later, Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman would follow her father and relocate to New Bedford after having received their certificate of removal (see below) from Nantucket Monthly Meeting, 31 5th month 1798, which mentioned Samuel, his wife Elizabeth and their children: Mary, Elizabeth, Thomas, William, Anna, Lydia, Samuel, Sarah, and Benjamin and indicated the family was in good standing.^[24]

Organizational Structure

Because the Rotch and Rodman families were so involved within the Society of Friends, it is important to understand the Quaker system of meetings and records, especially as some members of the families eventually found themselves in dispute with their local group.

The organizational structure of the Society of Friends is a hierarchy. At the local level, Friends in a particular area are members of a recognized entity or congregation called a Monthly Meeting. Some Monthly Meetings stood alone, and some were made up of subgroups from the surrounding area, variously known as Indulged Meetings or Particular Meetings.

²¹ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, 1st Book of Marriage Certificates, 1709–1755, p. 69, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²² Daniel F. Secomb *History of the Town of Amherst, Hillsborough County, New Hampshire* (Concord, N.H.: Printed by Evans, Sleeper & Woodbury, 1883), p. 750.

²³ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, Book No. 2, Records of the Certificates of Friends Marriages, 1755–1817, p. 263, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²⁴ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, Removal Certificates, 1775–1813, p. 105, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

Meetings

The next level up was the Quarterly Meeting, which comprised several Monthly Meetings. And the highest level was the Yearly Meeting, which comprised several Quarterly Meetings.

In the case of New Bedford in the 1820s, the organization was as follows:

- New England Yearly Meeting
 - Sandwich Quarterly Meeting
 - New Bedford Monthly Meeting
 - Longplain Particular Meeting
 - New Bedford Particular Meeting
 - Other worship groups (meetings that did not deal with church business)

Worship

Members of the most-local Meetings (Indulged, Particular, or Monthly) worshipped together on First Day (a.k.a., Sunday) in what were known as Meetings for Worship or Weekly Meetings or simply “meeting.” It was not unusual to have two meetings on First day, one in the morning and one in the afternoon. For instance, in the 1822 diary of Eliza Rodman, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, she mentions in February “3^d 1st day – Being once more freed from cold attended meeting, call’d to see my darling—also at Andrew’s – In the eve, read the Incas.”^[25] Meanwhile in the diary of her brother Samuel Rodman, Jr., in 1822 he recorded “June 16 Attended meeting A.M. and P.M. ad called at the lodgings of the other branches of the family.”^[26]

While Sunday was the traditional worship day, there was also a worship meeting held in the middle of the week on 4th day (Wednesday). According to *A Portraiture of Quakerism*, “. . . the Quakers think it proper, that men should be drawn together to the public worship of God: but if so, they must be drawn together at certain times. Now as one day has never been, in the eyes of the Quakers, more desirable for such an object than another, their ancestors chose the first day in the week [Sunday], because the Apostles had chosen it for the religious assembling of themselves and their followers. And in addition to this, that more frequent opportunities might be afforded them of bearing their outward testimony publicly for God, and of enlarging the sphere of their spiritual life, they appointed a meeting on one other day in the week in most places, and two in some others, for the same purpose.”^[27] Once again, in the diary of Samuel Rodman, Jr., he mentions, “June 19 Walked before breakfast, rode with my H. [Harriet Haydock (Prior) Rodman, his wife] and sister

²⁵ Diary of Eliza Rodman, 1822, New Bedford Whaling Museum Research Library Mss 4, Sub-Group 9, Eliza Rodman Papers, Box 4, Folder 2, New Bedford, Massachusetts.

²⁶ Zephaniah W. Pease, ed. *The Diary of Samuel Rodman, A New Bedford Chronical of Thirty-Seven Years, 1821–1859* (New Bedford, Mass.: Reynolds Printing Co., 1927), p. 16. [hereafter Pease, *Diary of Samuel Rodman*]

²⁷ Thomas Clarkson, *A Portraiture of Quakerism*, 3 vols. in 1 (1806; reprint, n.p.: e-artnow, 2020), vol. 1, p. 378.

P. in company with Jos. Grinnell and Eliza Russell to “Purgatory”, thence to Crindall’s Mill and returned by the west road. An interesting ride. Attended meeting 4 P.M. Evening occupied in obtaining subscriptions for repairing the meeting house. Called at cousin Clark Rodman’s.”^[28]

Business and Administration

The base unit for administration was the once a month Monthly Meeting. Composed of a subset of respected members of the congregation, responsible for records, membership, marriages, removals, disownments, and all manner of decisions for the good of the congregation, this is where the most genealogical and historical information is to be located. It is not unusual to find mention of appointments of members to attend larger meetings, discussions of finances, decisions of appropriate discipline of those members who were not adhering to the strict guidelines of the faith. The monthly meeting minutes, seldom indexed, are chronologically arranged.

Records

The Quakers keep exceptionally thorough records and through these, it is possible to research a family with a great degree of accuracy, in addition to learning what took place between a member and their local meeting.

Dating

The way members of the Society of Friends recorded dates is but one of the many indicators that someone was actually a Friend. Because the names of the days of the week and names of the months of the year came from Greek and Roman mythology Quakers were uncomfortable using them. Instead of the names of the days of the week, Sunday becomes First Day, Monday becomes Second Day and so on through Saturday which is Seventh Day. Likewise, the months are similarly referred to as First Month, Second Month and so on. Of course, prior to the change from the Julian Calendar to the Gregorian Calendar in 1752 for the British Kingdom and its colonies, First Month was March while February became Twelfth Month.

Registers

Birth and death information is often found in a stand-alone register at the Monthly Meeting level. It is important to note that birth dates within the records are generally included only for those born within a specific Monthly Meeting and those who are referred to as Birth-right Quakers. A Birth-right Quaker is a child born of Quaker parents in good standing when the child was born. Those individuals or families who converted to, or requested to join, the Quaker faith are known as Convinced Quakers. A member who joined as a Convinced Quaker will not have his birth listed in the records, neither will births of children born to a couple who are not in good standing at the time

²⁸ Pease, *Diary of Samuel Rodman*, p. 16.

of the birth. While the date of death and possibly the place of burial may be included in the register of members, this is not an absolute. Funerals are not performed in the Quaker faith. Additionally, many early Quakers may not even have a tombstone. And those that do have some marker, it will be something plain, perhaps with just their name and years or their initials. Members of the Society of Friends for many years regarded tombstones as pretentious and therefore not acceptable.

Certificate of Removal

If a member is moving to another town and they are a member in good standing, they will request a "Certificate of Removal". The certificate is then presented to the individual's or family's new meeting recognizing that they are members in good standing. In some records, especially William Wade Hinshaw's six volume *Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy*, the use of the abbreviation *roc* alludes to the person or family having been "received on certificate." Usually, the certificate includes the names of all the family members.

The Rotch and Rodman Families in Records

Information about other events may also be found in these types of registers. The family of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, one of the subjects of this study, was in the Record of the Members Births &c of the Monthly Meeting of New Bedford, dated 2nd month 1793 (when the New Bedford Monthly Meeting was established).^[29]

From the register, Samuel Rodman's family was intensely involved in the Society of Friends. Two additional entries on the same page for Mary Rotch (daughter of Joseph Rotch) and that of William Barker Rotch show additional types of information recorded in the register.

Though Samuel Rodman was born in Newport, Rhode Island, 11th 11 mo. 1753;^[30] New Bedford's clerk recorded his date of birth. There are no birth dates for his wife or children, though. The register page states that Samuel and his family were "received by certificate, dated 5 mo 31 1798." Samuel, his wife, and children call came from the Nantucket Monthly Meeting on Nantucket Island. Meanwhile, William Barker Rotch arrived in New Bedford in November 1819, he then left in July 1822 only to return in November of 1824.

William Barker Rotch was the nephew of Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman through her brother Benjamin Rotch who married Elizabeth Barker in Nantucket, Massachusetts, 29th 3 mo. 1787.^[31] Benjamin's father was William

²⁹ Record of the Members Births &c of the Monthly Meeting of New Bedford, dated 2nd month 1793, New Bedford Monthly Meeting of Friends Records, Births and Deaths, 1793–1881, p. 84, part of New England Yearly Meeting Records, MS902, N493, 09:B4, bound volume, Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts.

³⁰ Rhode Island: Vital Records, 1636–1850 (Online database: AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), Originally published as: Vital record of Rhode Island 1636–1850: First Series: births, marriages and deaths: a family register for the people, by James N. Arnold. Providence, RI: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, vol. 7, p. 72.

³¹ *Vital Records of Nantucket, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 5 vols. (Boston: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1927), vol. 4, p. 339.

Members received	Names	Births	Removed	Returned	Disowned	Restored	Deaths	Where buried
By certificate from Nantucket Dated 5 mo 31, 1798	Samuel Rodman	11m° 11 1753			3 m° 1825			
	his Wife Elizabeth				12 m° 1827			
	their Children		See Mary Fisher folio 30					
	Mary							
	Eliza				12 m° 1827		3 mo 20 1864	
	Thomas						3 mo 1809	At the Havannah, Cuba
	William		2 mo 25 1813					
	Anna		7 mo 1810	see Certificate for Anna Robeson				
	Lydia			see folio 90 wife of Micah Ruggles				
	Samuel		see folio 86					
by request 3 m° 1805	Sarah		see folio 71 wife of Charles W. Morgan					
	Benjamin			see folio 85				
	Mary Rotch (daug of Joseph)						3 m° 19 1837	N. Bedford aged 65
by certif 11 mo 1819	William Barker Rotch		7 m° 1822	11 m° 1824			10 m° 5 1826	New Bedford aged 23

Rotch, who had tried to keep Nantucket independent during the American Revolutionary War, and ended up traveling to Dunkirk, France in 1787 to revive his business.^[32] William's son Benjamin and his bride Elizabeth traveled across the Atlantic to join William Rotch by 1791 and where they remained at least until after 1793.^[33] Benjamin ultimately ended up in Milford Haven, Pembrokeshire, Wales by 1797,^[34] where Charles Francis Greville had hoped that England would reap the rewards of the Nantucketers (more than 150) had gone after being encouraged by Greville.^[35]

Among the children of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch was William Barker Rotch who was born 29 August 1802 in Milford Haven, Pembrokeshire, Wales.^[36] This is the William Barker Rotch seen in the table who first arrived by certificate in 1819. His certificate of removal would be found in both the Meeting minutes of Pembrokeshire Monthly Meeting. The acceptance of his certificate was found in the New Bedford Monthly Meeting minutes as recorded for 25th 11 mo. 1819.^[37] William Barker Rotch then removed to South Kingston and the certificate of removal was recorded at New Bedford dated 25th 7 mo. 1822.^[38] He returned to New Bedford with a certificate of removal from South Kingston Monthly Meeting dated 23rd 8 mo. 1824,^[39] and was received back into New Bedford Monthly Meeting 25th 11 mo. 1824.^[40] What wasn't recorded in the minutes was the death of William in 1826.

Meanwhile, there was Mary Rotch (daughter of Joseph) who, according to the birth register, requested membership in the Society of Friends at New Bedford. Research into Mary identified her as the daughter of Joseph Rotch who was from Provincetown, Massachusetts, the son of Benjamin and Martha Rotch. Benjamin, mentioned earlier, it was thought had not become a member of the Society of Friends and his granddaughters request reinforces that supposition. According to the New Bedford Monthly Meeting Women's Minutes, Martha Rotch approached the Friends early in 1803 and her request was brought before the women during the Monthly Meeting dated 19th 2 mo. 1805, in which Martha Routh, Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Card were appointed as a committee to discuss with Mary her request.^[41] Of interest is

³² Sarah Crabtree, "Quaker, Whaler, Coward, Spy!: William Rotch and the Age of Revolutions," *Age of Revolutions*, ageofrevolutions.com.

³³ John M. Bullard, *The Rotches* (New Bedford, Mass.: n.p., 1947), p. 444. *Based on the ages of his first four children.*

³⁴ John M. Bullard, *The Rotches* (New Bedford, Mass.: n.p., 1947), p. 444. *Based on the birth of his daughter Maria in Milford Haven, 20 May 1797.*

³⁵ Richard Ellis, *Men & Whales* (New York: The Lyons Press, 1991), p. 147.

³⁶ John M. Bullard, *The Rotches* (New Bedford, Mass.: n.p., 1947), p. 444.

³⁷ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Men's Minutes, 1808–1828, vol. 401, p. 217, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

³⁸ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Certificates of Removal, 1816–1887, vol. 441, p. 31, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

³⁹ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Certificates of Removal, 1816–1887, vol. 441, p. 42, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

⁴⁰ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Men's Minutes, 1808–1828, vol. 401, p. 291, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

⁴¹ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Women's Minutes, 1792–1821, vol. 430, p. 138, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

the appointment of Elizabeth Rodman, likely Elizabeth Rotch who married Samuel Rodman, who was Mary's second cousin.

The committee meets with Mary and then reports back that "the opportunity they have had with her have <sic> been to good satisfaction . . ." and during the Monthly Meeting held 19th 3 mo. 1805, the women, with unity from the men, agree to receive her into membership.^[42] Mary is a Convinced Quaker.

When a couple wished to marry, they would present themselves to the Monthly Meeting. They would both indicate their wish to be married. Committees would be named to investigate the two people and if there were no impediments, the committees would report back, often at the next Monthly Meeting. The marriage was then allowed to take place. Those appointed to attend the marriage, to ensure it was conducted in a solemn manner, would then report back after the marriage. All this information is found in the Monthly Meeting minutes. However, there is usually a register of transcriptions of the actual marriage records. Unlike many other religious denominations in which the record lists the name of the groom, the bride, the person who performs the marriage and the two witnesses, a Quaker marriage record lists much more information. Also important is that a Quaker couple would not be married by a civil authority.

The record for the marriage of Joseph Rotch and Love Macy, in 1733/4, begins "Whereas Joseph Rotch the Son of William Rotch & Hannah his wife of Salem in y^e Province of y^e Massachusetts Bay in New England Deceased &c. And Love Macy y^e Daughter of Thomas Macy & Deborah his wife of Sherborn on y^e Island of Nantucket in y^e Province afore s^d &c . . ."^[43]

The first paragraph goes on to mention the proceedings that took place before the marriage was approved. The second paragraph lists the date on which the couple were officially married, describing what they said to each other. Following would be a statement addressing the change of surname of the wife and their signatures (with the wife signing with her new married name).

What is most interesting in a Quaker marriage record is the list of those who were present at the marriage, as each individual signs the marriage document which the couple will keep. A transcribed version of this document is what can be found in the marriage register. Those present at the marriage whose names are listed will all be members in good standing. Of interest in the marriage of Joseph Rotch to Love Macy, there is no one in the list with the surname of Rotch, additional evidence that Joseph was a Convinced Quaker.

Other Records

In addition to the general business of the meeting, the Monthly Meeting minutes discuss any issues relating to members who may be straying from the strict beliefs of the Friends. Mention of what a member has done, such as mar-

⁴² New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Women's Minutes, 1792–1821, vol. 430, p. 139, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

⁴³ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, 1st Book of Marriage Certificates, 1709–1755, p. 69, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

rying outside the faith, falling into debt, or neglecting meetings will be stated. A committee is appointed to talk to the member to see if they are contrite and recognize what they have done is wrong. Based on the committee's opinion of the member's response to their visit they may recommend to the Men's or Women's Meeting that the member should be disowned. Disownment does not mean that the individual can no longer attend the meeting, but they are no longer considered a Friend and cannot participate in the business of the meeting. If they individual is to be disowned, he or she will be presented with a document known as a testimony of disownment which describes the nature of the offence and how the committee and leaders have come to determine that disownment is necessary. The document may also indicate how the individual may be able to repent and return to the fold. In the Monthly Meeting minutes, there will an item where a member is assigned to "inform" the individual, which is reference to the document.

In addition to finding mentions in the Monthly Meeting minutes for the Men's and Women's meetings of the decision to disown a member, there may also be mention of the date of disownment recorded in the register of births and deaths. For instance, according to the transcription above, Samuel Rodman was disowned in the 3rd month 1825 while his wife Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and their daughter Eliza were disowned in the 12th month 1827. This information helped in understanding more about how their granddaughter, Emily Morgan, ended up marrying in the Congregational Church in New Bedford.

A member who is disowned can seek to be restored. A lot depends on the reasons for the disownment. If the individual can make things right, they can then be restored and once again become a member in good standing.

It is through careful reading of the Monthly Meeting minutes that the troubles between New Bedford Monthly Meeting and the Rotches and the Rodmans would be uncovered. The Monthly Meeting is but one of the various meetings Friends attended. However, it was in these minutes that information about the elevation to Elder—a position of religious leadership afforded both men and women—of Samuel Rodman's wife Elizabeth Rotch and her sister Mary Rotch would be found. Also found in the minutes were the Rodmans and Rotches being assigned as overseers—"men and women who watched over the ministry in order to nurture the spiritual life of the Meeting."^[44] All of this showing that these families were heavily involved in their faith and highly respected within their Meeting.

At the time of the issues between the Rotch and Rodman families and the New Bedford Monthly Meeting, there was discussion of turning over the issue of the possible release of Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Mary Rotch as Elders to the Quarterly Meeting. This was mentioned as an endeavour to seek a higher level of decision making. During New Bedford's Monthly Meeting held 25th 12 mo. 1823, as discussions continued as to what to do with Elizabeth Rodman and Mary Rotch, Cornelius Howland suggested that New Bedford

⁴⁴ Hugh Barbour and J. William Frost, *The Quakers* (New York: Greenwood Press, 1988), p. 109.

“as the aid of a superior meet’g – he should be willing to go to the Qtly [Quarterly] or even the Yearly meet’g if necessary.”^[45]

In Unity

One of the most important aspects of the decisions arrived at in the meetings is that agreements on all business were arrived at “in unity”. The minutes generally reference that the Men’s Meeting is in unity with the Women’s Meeting and vice versa. For instance, if a woman married a man who was not a Quaker and the committee assigned by the Women’s Meeting returned from talking with the woman and shared that she was not sorry for her decision, then the Women’s Meeting would likely determine that the woman should be disowned. Their decision would then be passed along to the Men’s Meeting who would agree “in unity” with the women.

Such an effort to reach unity might even take years. A visitor to New Bedford, John Handy from the Dartmouth Monthly Meeting, pointed this out during the intense discussions during New Bedford Monthly Meeting of 25th 12 mo 1823, when he said “Friends, if my arm be diseased, I cannot say that my whole body is sound. So, where any friends object to a measure, the meet’g cannot be said to unite in doing it, how can we say that the meet’g has come to a conclusion on an subject, when if we converse with the individual members who constitute that meet’g, we find one half of them expressing one opinion, & the other to think directly opposite to it. We must wait months, or a year or two or thrice years, or longer until the thing ca be rightly done if it be done at all.”^[46]

While unity is important the research into the Rotches and Rodmans would offer more disunity of agreement. While the minutes indicate that a particular decision was reached in unity, additional contemporary records suggested a very different outcome. The decisions of the New Bedford Monthly Meeting resulted in lasting effects on the descendants of the Rotches and Rodmans.

Rhonda R. McClure is Senior Genealogist of American Ancestors & New England Historic Genealogical Society. She is a consulting editor of the New England Historical and Genealogical Register.

⁴⁵ Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, Journal, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, p. 46.

⁴⁶ Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, Journal, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, p. 48.

The Rotches and the Rodmans

A Tale of New Bedford Quakerism

Part 2: Rotch and Rodman Families^[1]

Rhonda R. McClure

While the Rodman family were members of the Quaker faith tracing back to Ireland in the 1600s,^[2] the Rotch family did not come to Massachusetts as Quakers. Those descendants of William Rotch who married Hannah Potter are addressed here, with the Rodmans intermarrying with his grandchildren. Not all children are carried forward, only those who were directly involved, or associated with those directly involved, with the “New Light” schism that took hold of the New Bedford Monthly Meeting in the early 1820s. Those whose full names have been *italicize* were disowned from the New Bedford Monthly Meeting.

1. WILLIAM¹ ROTCH was born probably about 1650; died probably at Salem, Massachusetts by 28 June 1705 when his estate was administered.^[3] He married HANNAH POTTER.

Children of William and Hannah (Potter) Rotch:^[4]

- i. WILLIAM² ROTCH, b. Salem, Mass., 12 Aug. 1692.
- ii. HANNAH ROTCH, b. 12 Oct. 1694.
- iii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. 16 April 1697.
- iv. MARY ROTCH, b. 26 Oct. 1699.
- 2 v. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. prob. ca. 1702.
- 3 vi. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. 6 March 1704.

2. BENJAMIN² ROTCH (*William*¹) was born probably at Salem, circa 1702.^[5] He died at Boston, Massachusetts by 26 May 1758.^[6] He married a woman

¹ The dates are either in the genealogical standard of day-month-year or in the format found in Quaker records where there is no use of the names of the months. In some instances, an individual could be a member of the Society of Friends, but the records used to verify information had converted the date. In all situations where a person was disowned, any date after their disownment is done using the genealogical standard format.

² John Rutt, *A History of the Rise and Progress of the People Called Quakers, in Ireland, from the Year 1653 to 1700*, 2nd ed. (London: William Phillips, 1800), p. 344.

³ William Roche, 1705, Estate Packet, no. 23944, Essex County, Massachusetts, Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts, Archives and Records Preservation, Boston, Massachusetts, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

⁴ John M. Bullard, *The Rotches* (New Bedford, Mass.: n.p., 1947), p. 546 [hereafter *The Rotches*]

⁵ *The Rotches*, p. 546. [note 4]

⁶ Benjamin Rotch, Estate File, 1758, no. 11787, *Suffolk County, MA: Probate File Papers*. Online database. *AmericanAncestors.org*. New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2017–2019.

named MARTHA _____, who was left his widow, and three sons who survived him. As mentioned in Part 1 of this article in *The Rotches* it is suggested that her maiden name may have been Paine,^[7] however, it is possible she was the Martha Howes who married Benjamin [*sic*] Rotch at Yarmouth, Massachusetts likely in 1724 or 1725.^[8]

Children of Benjamin and Martha (_____) Rotch, born in Provincetown, Massachusetts:

- i. BENJAMIN³ ROTCH, b. 23 Oct. 1729.^[9]
- ii. PAINE ROTCH, b. 20 Nov. 1731.^[10]
- 4 iii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. 13 Nov. 1733.^[11]
- iv. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. 4 Nov. 1735.^[12]
- v. SAMUEL ROTCH, b. ca. 1737.^[13]

3. JOSEPH² ROTCH (*William*¹) was probably born at Salem, 6 March 1704/5.^[14] He died at Dartmouth, Massachusetts, 24 November 1784. He married (1) at Nantucket, Massachusetts, 21st 12 mo. (“called February”) 1733/4, LOVE MACY, daughter of Thomas and Deborah (Coffin) Macy.^[15] He married (2) 29 December 1768, REBECCA (VAUGHAN) CORNELL.^[16]

Joseph appears to be the first Quaker of the Rotch family. It is suggested that he arrived from Salem to Nantucket in 1725,^[17] though within the Nantucket Monthly Meeting Records he is not mentioned until the Monthly Meeting held 26th 9 mo. 1733 when he and Love Macy declare their intentions to marry. According to the Nantucket register of births and other events, he was received 26th 9 mo. 1733.^[18] The following month, Jethro Folger and

(From records supplied by the Massachusetts Supreme Judicial Court Archives. Digitized images provided by FamilySearch.org).

⁷ *The Rotches*, p. 546. [note 4]

⁸ Robert M. Sherman and Ruth Wilder Sherman, *Vital Records of Yarmouth, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Rhode Island: Society of Mayflower Descendants in the State of Rhode Island, 1975) vol. 1, p. 144. The marriage, conducted by Danil Greenleaf, Clark, was recorded between a marriage he conducted 26 November 1724 and one he conducted 21 October 1725.

⁹ Beniman Rotch birth, 23 October 1729, in Births 1698–1802, Marriages 1745–1783, Deaths 1730–1783, Recorded in Provincetown, Massachusetts, typescript, p. 2, digitized image on FamilySearch.org. In *The Rotches* he is listed as William Rotch, p. 546. [note 4]

¹⁰ Paine Rotch birth, 29 November 1731, Provincetown Vital Records, p. 2. [note 9] In *The Rotches* his name is listed as Prince, p. 546. [note 4]

¹¹ Joseph Rotch birth, 13 November 1733, Provincetown Vital Records, p. 5, [note 9]

¹² Benjamin Rotch birth, 4 November 1735, Provincetown Vital Records, p. 6. [note 9]

¹³ *The Rotches*, p. 546. [note 4]

¹⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 407. [note 4]

¹⁵ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, 1st Book of Marriage Certificates, 1709–1755, p. 69, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org. This date reflects the calendar as it existed before England and its colonies embraced the Gregorian calendar in 1752. [hereafter Nantucket MM Marriages, 1st Book]

¹⁶ *The Rotches*, p. 407. [note 4]

¹⁷ Edouard A. Stackpole, *William Rotch (1734–1828) America's Pioneer in International Industry* (New York: The Newcomen Society of North America, 1950), p. 10. [hereafter Stackpole, *William Rotch*]

¹⁸ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, A Record of the Births, Death, Receptions, Disownments & Removals, 1708–1886, p. 162, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association,

Nathaniel Coleman, having been tasked the previous month with examining the clearness of Joseph Rotch to be married, indicate that he has no impediments.^[19] This indicates that he is a Friend in good standing.

Children of Joseph and Love (Macy) Rotch, born at Nantucket:^[20]

- 5 i. WILLIAM³ ROTCH, b. 4th 10 mo. 1734.
- ii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. 27th 10 mo. 1743.
- iii. FRANCIS ROTCH, b. 30th 9 mo. 1750.

4. JOSEPH³ ROTCH (*Benjamin*², *William*¹) was born at Provincetown, 13 November 1733.^[21] He died at New Bedford, Massachusetts, 17 April 1809.^[22] He married at Boston, 11 June 1765, JANE ALLINE.^[23]

Known children of Joseph and Jane (Alline) Rotch:

- i. MARY⁴ ROTCH, b. ca. 1772; d. New Bedford, 19 March 1837.^[24] Mary joined the Society of Friends at New Bedford, as a Convinced Quaker (a convert), after the Women's Meeting approved her request at the Monthly Meeting held 19th 3 mo. 1805.^[25] She was highlighted in Part 1 of this article.
 - ii. NANCY ROTCH, b. New Bedford, 26 Oct. 1776; d. there, 23 April 1867.^[26]
5. WILLIAM³ ROTCH (*Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 4th 10 mo. 1734.^[27] He died at New Bedford, 14th 5 mo. 1828.^[28] He married at Nantucket 31st 10 mo. ("called October") 1754, ELIZABETH BARNEY, daughter of Benja-

Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org. [hereafter Nantucket MM, Births, etc.]

¹⁹ Nantucket Monthly Meeting, Men's Meeting Minutes, 1708–1772, pp. 72–3, Society of Friends Records, Nantucket Historical Association, Nantucket, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²⁰ *Vital Records of Nantucket, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 5 vols. (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1926), vol. 2, p. 439. [hereafter *Nantucket VRs to 1850*]

²¹ Joseph Rotch birth, 13 November 1733, in Births 1698–1802, Marriages 1745–1783, Deaths 1730–1783, Recorded in Provincetown, Massachusetts, typescript, p. 5, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²² *Vital Records of New Bedford, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 3 vols. (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1941), vol. 3, p. 141. [hereafter *New Bedford VRs to 1850*]

²³ *Records Relating to the Early History of Boston, Containing Boston Marriages 1752–1809* (Boston: Municipal Printing Office, 1903), vol. 30, p. 380.

²⁴ Record of the Members Births &c of the Monthly Meeting of New Bedford, dated 2nd month 1793, New Bedford Monthly Meeting of Friends Records, Births and Deaths, 1793–1881, p. 84, part of New England Yearly Meeting Records, MS902, N493, 09:B4, bound volume Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts. [hereafter New Bedford MM Births &c]

²⁵ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Women's Minutes, 1792–1821, vol. 430, p. 139, microfilmed in 1950 copies of original records at Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence, R.I. (now deposited at University of Massachusetts Amherst Special Collections), digitized image on FamilySearch.org. [hereafter New Bedford MM Women's Minutes]

²⁶ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1867, vol. 202, p. 101 and *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 394.

²⁷ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 439. [note 20]

²⁸ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 81. [note 24]

min and Lydia (Starbuck) Barney.^[29] She was born at Nantucket, 23rd 1 mo. 1735.^[30] She died at New Bedford, 14th 5 mo. 1824.^[31]

William and his wife removed to New Bedford Monthly Meeting on certificate 22nd 10 mo. 1795.^[32]

“Casting his fortunes with Nantucket from his first ventures as a trader, William Rotch for the next forty years helped develop the whale oil industry to the point where Nantucket became the World’s greatest whaling port.”^[33] He and his sons would continue their whaling businesses well into the 1800s, going to France, Wales, and New Bedford.

Children of William and Elizabeth (Barney) Rotch, born in Nantucket:^[34]

- i. WILLIAM⁴ ROTCH, b. 24th 8 mo. 1755; d. Nantucket, 7th 2 mo. 1757.^[35]
- 6 ii. ELIZABETH ROTCH, b. 9th 12 mo. 1757.
- 7 iii. WILLIAM ROTCH, b. 29th 11 mo. 1759.
- iv. SUSANNA ROTCH, b. 10th 4 mo. 1762; d. Nantucket, 7th 9 mo. 1762.^[36]
- 8 v. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. 12th 9 mo. 1764.
- vi. THOMAS ROTCH, b. 13th 7 mo. 1767; d. Mount Pleasant, Jefferson Co., Ohio, 14th 9 mo. 1823;^[37] m. prob. at Newport, R.I. 13 May 1790,^[38] CHARITY RODMAN, dau. of Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman, b. Newport, 31 Oct. 1766;^[39] d. Ohio, 6 Aug. 1824.^[40]
- vii. LYDIA ROTCH, b. 29th 10 mo. 1770; d. Salem, 10 March 1822;^[41] m. New Bedford, 27th 9 mo. 1811, WILLIAM DEAN, son of John and Rebecca Dean.^[42]
- viii. MARY ROTCH, b. 9 Oct. 1777; d. New Bedford, 4 Sept. 1848.^[43] Mary, along with her sister, Elizabeth, were the focus of the disagreements within the New Bedford Monthly Meeting in the early 1820s. She was released

²⁹ Nantucket MM Marriages, 1st Book, p. 229 [note 15]

³⁰ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 19. [note 18]

³¹ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 81. [note 24]

³² New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 81. [note 24]

³³ Stackpole, *William Rotch*, p. 11. [note 17]

³⁴ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 439. [note 20]

³⁵ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 5, p. 516. [note 20]

³⁶ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 5, p. 516. [note 20]

³⁷ Barbara K. Wittman, *Thomas and Charity Rotch: The Quaker Experience of Settlement in Ohio in the Early Republic 1800–1824* (Newcastle upon Tyne, England: Cambridge Scholars Publishing, 2015), p. 192. [hereafter Thomas and Charity Rotch]

³⁸ Rhode Island: Vital Records, 1636–1850 (Online database: AmericanAncestors.org, New England Historic Genealogical Society, 2014), Originally published as: *Vital record of Rhode Island 1636–1850: First Series: births, marriages and deaths: a family register for the people*, by James N. Arnold. Providence, RI: Narragansett Historical Publishing Company, vol. 12, p. 78. Citing the *Newport Herald*. [hereafter Arnold’s Rhode Island VRs]

³⁹ Arnold’s Rhode Island VRs, vol. 7, p. 72. [note 38]

⁴⁰ Thomas and Charity Rotch, p. 196. [note 37]

⁴¹ *Vital Records of Salem, Massachusetts to the End of the Year 1849*, 5 vols. (Salem, Mass.: The Essex Institute, 1925), vol. 5, p. 199. [hereafter Salem VRs to 1850]

⁴² *New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Marriages, 1795–1918*, p. 92, part of *New England Yearly Meeting Records*, MS902, N493, 09:B4, bound volume, Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst, Amherst, Massachusetts. [hereafter New Bedford MM Marriages 1795–1918]

⁴³ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 141.

from her position as Elder in New Bedford, 25th 3 mo. 1824 and subsequently disowned 26th 8 mo. 1824.^[44]

6. ELIZABETH⁴ ROTCH (*William³, Joseph², William¹*) was born at Nantucket, 9th 12 mo. 1757.^[45] She died at New Bedford, 2 August 1856.^[46] She married at Nantucket, 1st 6 mo. 1780, SAMUEL RODMAN, son of Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman. He was born at Newport, 11 November 1753^[47] and died at New Bedford, 24 December 1835.^[48]

Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, along with her younger sister Mary, who never married, were the impetus to so many of the Rotches and Rodmans leaving the Society of Friends, most of them because of what happened to these two women, the focus of which is in the next article. Samuel Rodman, after the vote that revoked Elizabeth's and Mary's position as Elders, was so incensed by what had taken place that he "tendered a resignation of his right of membership to the Mo[nthly] Meeting. He declined entering into the reasons which had led to this step, which must be well known to most who were present—he said it was not a hasty one, but taken after mature deliberation, [and] he should only request a copy of the minute made on this subject."^[49]

Children of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman, born in Nantucket:^[50]

- 9 i. MARY⁵ RODMAN, b. 14th 6 mo. 1781.
- ii. ELIZABETH "ELIZA" RODMAN, b. 24th 9 mo. 1782; d. New Bedford, 26 May 1864, unmar.;^[51] disowned, 27th 12 mo. 1827, for neglect of meetings.^[52]
- iii. THOMAS RODMAN, b. 21st 6 mo. 1784; d. Havana, Havana Province, Cuba, 3 mo. 1809.^[53]
- 10 iv. WILLIAM ROTCH RODMAN, b. 24th 4 mo. 1786.
- 11 v. ANNA RODMAN, b. 5th 11 mo. 1787.
- 12 vi. LYDIA RODMAN, b. 15th 9 mo. 1790.
- 13 vii. SAMUEL RODMAN, b. 24th 3 mo. 1792.
- 14 viii. SARAH RODMAN, b. 31st 10 mo. 1793.
- 15 ix. BENJAMIN RODMAN, b. 25th 11 mo. 1794.

⁴⁴ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, pp. 24, 29. [note 25]

⁴⁵ Nantucket VRs to 1850, vol. 2, p. 439. [note 20]

⁴⁶ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1856, vol. 102, p. 82. She is listed as "Unnamed Rodman, died of old age, residing on N. Second."

⁴⁷ Arnold's Rhode Island VRs, vol. 7, p. 72. [note 38]

⁴⁸ New Bedford VRs to 1850, vol. 3, p. 140. [note 22]

⁴⁹ Anonymous Friend/Sarah Morgan?, Journal, 1823–1825, MSS 003/186. Friends Historical Library collection of journals, SFHL-MSS-003. Friends Historical Library of Swarthmore College, Swarthmore, Pennsylvania, p. 116. This was in reference to the normal creation of the document known as a "testimony to disownment" or a "testimony of denial." [hereafter FHL/Swarthmore Anonymous Journal]

⁵⁰ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, pp. 433–34. [note 20]

⁵¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1864, vol. 174, p. 119.

⁵² New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 71 (complaint) and p. 73 (disownment). [note 25]

⁵³ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 84. [note 24]

7. WILLIAM⁴ ROTCH (*William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 29th 11 mo. 1759.^[54] He died at New Bedford, 17 April 1850.^[55] He married (1) at Leicester, Massachusetts, 17th 7 mo. 1782, ELIZABETH RODMAN, daughter of Thomas and Mary (Borden) Rodman.^[56] She was born at Newport, 3 March 1759^[57] and died at New Bedford, 30th 1 mo. 1828.^[58] William married (2) Providence, 25 April 1829, LYDIA SCOTT, daughter of Job Scott.^[59] She was born September 1782 and died at Waltham, Massachusetts, 18 July 1863.^[60]

William, upon his own request, was removed as an Elder by the New Bedford Monthly Meeting, 23rd 10 mo. 1828 in which was noted “William Rotch, Junr. having in our last Mo. Meeting requested to be released from the Station of an Elder, on the ground of want of unity with the minutes or conclusions of the Yearly Meeting, read in this Meeting in the seventh month last, we do, after deliberately considering the case, think it best, at the same time that we feel united with the conclusions referred to, to release his as requested, and no longer consider him as standing in the station of an Elder.”^[61] He was subsequently disowned 24th 9 mo. 1829, “on account of his departure from the order of our Society in marriage . . .”^[62]

Children of William and Elizabeth (Rodman) Rotch:

- 16 i. SARAH⁵ ROTCH, b. Nantucket, 3rd 6 mo. 1786.^[63]
 ii. WILLIAM RODMAN ROTCH, b. Dartmouth, Mass., 1st 11 mo. 1788;^[64] d. St. Catherine’s, Canada West, 18 Sept. 1860;^[65] m. New York City, New York Co., N.Y., 17 July 1820, CAROLINE STOCKTON, dau. of Richard and Susan (Field) Stockton.^[66] She was b. Princeton, Somerset Co. (now Mercer Co.), N.J. circa 1804;^[67] d. New Bedford, 14 Dec. 1856;^[68] disowned, 25th 1 mo. 1821, for marrying outside the faith.^[69]
- 17 iii. JOSEPH ROTCH, b. Dartmouth, 30th 11 mo. 1790;^[70]

⁵⁴ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 439. [note 20]

⁵⁵ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1850, vol. 48, p. 66.

⁵⁶ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 4, p. 339. [note 20]

⁵⁷ *Arnold’s Rhode Island VRs*, vol. 7, p. 72. [note 38]

⁵⁸ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 80. [note 24]

⁵⁹ *The Rotches*, p. 409. [note 4]

⁶⁰ *The Rotches*, p. 409. [note 4]

⁶¹ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Men’s Minutes, 1808–1828, vol. 402, p. 4, microfilmed in 1950 copies of original records at Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence, R.I. (now deposited at University of Massachusetts Amherst Special Collections), digitized image on FamilySearch.org. [hereafter New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes]

⁶² New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 19. [note 61]

⁶³ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 439.

⁶⁴ *Vital Records of Dartmouth, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 3 vols. (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1929), vol. 1, p. 204. [hereafter *Dartmouth VRs to 1850*]

⁶⁵ *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

⁶⁶ *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

⁶⁷ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1856, vol. 102, p. 85.

⁶⁸ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1856, vol. 102, p. 85.

⁶⁹ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 230. [note 61]

⁷⁰ *Dartmouth VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 203. [note 64]

- iv. THOMAS ROTCH, b. Darmouth, 14th 9 mo. 1792;^[71] d. Clermont, McKean Co., Penn., 1 Oct. 1840;^[72] m. Philadelphia, 8th 5 mo. 1816;^[73] SUSAN RIDGWAY, b. 25th 9 mo. 1797; d. 25 Feb. 1885;^[74] disowned, 25th 10 mo. 1821 for having “so far deviated from our profession, as to contribute on a late occasion of publick rejoicing, to the expense of a band of musick, and otherwise to aid and countenance some of the proceedings of the day . . .”^[75]
- v. MARY ROTCH, b. New Bedford, 18th 11 mo. 1793;^[76] d. Winthrop, Mass., 13 Aug. 1878;^[77] m. (1) New Bedford, 1 Aug. 1823, JOHN WILLIAM CHARLES FLEMING;^[78] d. Key West, Florida Keys, Fla., 18 Dec. 1832;^[79] m. (2) New Bedford, 24 Nov. 1834,^[80] GEORGE BARRELL EMERSON, b. Wells, Maine, 12 Sept. 1797;^[81] d. Newton, Mass. 4 March 1881.^[82] Mary disowned, 25th 9 mo. 1823 for marrying outside the faith.^[83]
- vi. MARTHA ROTCH, b. New Bedford, 5th 4 mo. 1797; d. there, 9th 6 mo. 1798.^[84]
- vii. EDMUND ROTCH, b. New Bedford, 18th 11 mo. 1798; d. there, 29th 11 mo. 1798.^[85]

8. BENJAMIN⁴ ROTCH (*William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 12th 9 mo. 1764.^[86] He died at St. Pancras, London, England, 30 March 1839.^[87] He married at Nantucket, 29th 3 mo. 1787, ELIZABETH BARKER, daughter of Josiah and Elizabeth (Hussey) Barker.^[88] Elizabeth was born at Nantucket, 3rd 11 mo. 1764.^[89] She died at London, 4 December 1857.^[90]

According to Nantucket Monthly Meeting records, Benjamin, with his wife and oldest child, removed to Canterbury Monthly Meeting in England 28th 4 mo. 1788 (as there was no Quaker meeting in France), when his family joined his father in traveling to Dunkirk, France to rebuild their whaling business.^[91]

⁷¹ *Dartmouth VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 204. [note 64]

⁷² *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

⁷³ *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

⁷⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

⁷⁵ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 401, p. 245. [note 61]

⁷⁶ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 80. [note 24]

⁷⁷ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1878, vol. 303, p. 303.

⁷⁸ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 451. [note 22]

⁷⁹ *The Rotches*, p. 412. [note 4]

⁸⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 202. [note 22]

⁸¹ *The Rotches*, p. 412. [note 4]

⁸² Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, vol. 329, p. 159.

⁸³ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 18. [note 25]

⁸⁴ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 80. [note 24]

⁸⁵ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 80 [note 24]

⁸⁶ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 164. [note 18]

⁸⁷ *The Rotches*, p. 443 [note 4] and Civil Registration Death Index, 1837–2005, Middlesex, London, 2nd Quarter, 1839, citing District of St. Pancras, vol. I, p. 223, digitized image on TheGenealogist.com.

⁸⁸ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 4, p. 339. [note 20]

⁸⁹ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 56. [note 20]

⁹⁰ *The Rotches*, p. 443. [note 4]

⁹¹ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 166. [note 18]

Because of the Society of Friends' obligation to not pay tithes, on "June 1st, 1813" Benjamin ultimately decided that he should be paying them. As such he stated, "... and after mature deliberation, my mind being fully convinced that with-holding tithes from those who have a legal claim to them is more criminal than paying them, I have decided to comply in future with all such demands; but, unwilling (as a member) to deviate from the rules of a Society which I not only respect and esteem but the fundamental principles of which I generally revere, I hereby resign my membership in that Society."^[92]

Meanwhile his wife, Elizabeth, was still a member of the Society of Friends.

Children of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Barker) Rotch:

- i. FRANCIS⁶ ROTCH, b. Nantucket, 16th 1 mo. 1788;^[93] d. Morris, Otsego Co., N.Y., 19 Jan. 1874; m. Philadelphia, Philadelphia Co., Penn., 1st 12 mo. 1819, ANNE WALN MORGAN, dau. of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan.^[94] She was b. Philadelphia, 4th 6 mo. 1800.^[95] Francis and his family were received from Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, 27th 4 mo 1820.^[96] Disowned, 22nd 9 mo. 1825, having withdrawn from meetings.^[97] Anne, disowned, 28th 12 mo. 1826, for neglecting meetings and attending those of the Unitarian Society.^[98]
- ii. WILLIAM ROTCH, died in infancy.^[99]
- iii. ELIZA ROTCH, b. Dunkirk, Dunkirk, Nord, Hauts-de-France, France, 12th 7 mo. 1791;^[100] d. Springfield, Mass., 22 April 1870;^[101] m. New Bedford, 10 Oct. 1828, Professor John Farrar.^[102] Disowned, 25th 8 mo. 1825, for "unbecoming conduct and public appearances" as well as attending meetings of another denomination.^[103]
- iv. BENJAMIN ROTCH, b. Dunkirk, 29th 11 mo. 1793;^[104] d. 31 Oct. 1854, Harrow, Middlesex, England,^[105] m. Fulford, Yorkshire (East Riding), England, 8 Aug. 1828, ISABELLE ANNE JUDD.^[106]

⁹² Francis Green, ed., *West Wales Historical Records, The Annual Magazine of The Historical Society of West Wales* (Carmarthen, Wales: W. Spurrell & Son), vol. 12 (1927), p. 18, digitized on TheGenealogist.com.

⁹³ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 166. [note 18]

⁹⁴ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Marriages 1814–1949, pp. 57–58, Department of Friends' Records, Arch Street, Philadelphia, vol. V, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

⁹⁵ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Northern District, Births and Deaths, 1772–1806, p. 42, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

⁹⁶ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 401, p. 222. [note 61]

⁹⁷ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 401, p. 300. [note 61]

⁹⁸ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 55 (complaint) and p. 60 (disownment). [note 25]

⁹⁹ *The Rotches*, p. 443. [note 4]

¹⁰⁰ *The Rotches*, p. 443. [note 4]

¹⁰¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1870, vol. 230, p. 32.

¹⁰² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 197. [note 22]

¹⁰³ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 38 (complaint) and p. 42 (disownment). [note 25]

¹⁰⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 444.

¹⁰⁵ Benjamin Rotch, Death, 1854, District of Hendon, vol. 3A, p. 68, no. 134, General Record Office, London, England.

¹⁰⁶ Rotch-Judd, Marriage, 1828, Marriages, 1813–1837, p. 31, Borthwick Institute for Archives, B-PR-FUL-7, digitized image on FindMyPast.com. The couple were married by license. Benjamin

- v. MARIA ROTCH, b. Milford Haven, Pembrokeshire, Wales, 20th 5 mo. 1797;^[107] d. Kemp Town, Brighton, Sussex, England, 30 Nov. 1874;^[108] m. REV. STEPHEN F. LANGSTON.^[109]
- vi. WILLIAM BARKER ROTCH, b. Milford Haven, 29th 8 mo. 1802;^[110] d. New Bedford, 5th 10 mo. 1826.^[111] He was highlighted in Part 1 of this article.
- vii. CAROLINE ROTCH, b. Milford Haven, 5th 1 mo. 1804;^[112] d. there, 28th 1 mo. 1805.^[113]
- viii. THOMAS DICKASON ROTCH, b. Milford Haven, 14th 6 mo. 1807;^[114] d. prob. Kensal Green, London, by 13 April 1861, when buried;^[115] m. (1) Liverpool, Lancashire, England, in St. Philip's, 30 Jan. 1832, Catherine Elizabeth Wason, b. ca. 1804;^[116] m. (2) Surbiton, Surrey, England in St. Mark's, 2 Aug. 1855, Sarah Wason.^[117]

9. MARY⁵ RODMAN (Elizabeth⁴, William³, Joseph², William¹) was born at Nantucket, 14th 6 mo. 1781.^[118] She died at Philadelphia, Philadelphia County, Pennsylvania, 4th 6 mo. 1813,^[119] where she is buried in German-

was likely no longer a member of the Society of Friends at the time of his marriage or disowned shortly after marrying outside the faith.

¹⁰⁷ Maria Rotch, Birth, 1797, A Register of Births Belonging to the Monthly Meeting of Haverford West, Pembrokeshire, Non-Conformist and Non-Parochial Births, Marriages, and Deaths, RG6/Piece 234, p. 1, The National Archives, London, digitized image on TheGenealogist.com.

¹⁰⁸ Maria Langston, Death, 1874, District of Brighton, vol. 2B, p. 121, no. 240, General Record Office, London, England.

¹⁰⁹ *The Rotches*, p. 443. [note 4]

¹¹⁰ William Barker Rotch, Birth, 1802, A Register of Births Belonging to the Monthly Meeting of Haverford West, Pembrokeshire, Non-Conformist and Non-Parochial Births, Marriages, and Deaths, RG6/Piece 234, p. 2, The National Archives, London, digitized image on TheGenealogist.com.

¹¹¹ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 84. [note 24]

¹¹² Caroline Rotch, Birth, 1804, A Register of Births Belonging to the Monthly Meeting of Haverford West, Pembrokeshire, Non-Conformist and Non-Parochial Births, Marriages, and Deaths, RG6/Piece 234, p. 2, The National Archives, London, digitized image on TheGenealogist.com.

¹¹³ Caroline Rotch, Death, 1805, Register of Burials, 1791–1820; General Meeting of Herefordshire, Worcestershire, and Wales, RG6/Piece 930, p. 67, The National Archives, London, digitized image on TheGenealogist.com.

¹¹⁴ Thomas Dickason Rotch, Birth, 1807, A Register of Births Belonging to the Monthly Meeting of Haverford West, Pembrokeshire, Non-Conformist and Non-Parochial Births, Marriages, and Deaths, RG6/Piece 234, p. 2

¹¹⁵ All Souls' Cemetery Burials, Kensal Green, 1856–1862, Bishop's Transcript Register, p. 198, "London, England, Church of England Deaths and Burials, 1813–2003," *Ancestry.com*, citing Church of England Parish Registers, DL/T/041/028, London Metropolitan Archives, London, England.

¹¹⁶ Rotch-Wason, Marriage, 1832, "Marriage licenses, bonds and allegations for the Consistory Court of the Archdeaconry of Chester, 1606–1905," Cheshire Record Office, Chester, England, digitized image on FamilySearch.org. *He was either already no longer a member of the Society of Friends when he married, or he was disowned shortly after for marrying outside the faith.*

¹¹⁷ Rotch-Wason, Marriage, 1855, "Surrey, England, Church of England Marriages and Banns, 1754–1937," *Ancestry.com*.

¹¹⁸ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 165. [note 18]

¹¹⁹ William Logan Fisher and Nicholas B. Wainwright, "Memoir of William Logan Fisher (1781–1862) for His Grandchildren," *The Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography*, vol. 99, No. 1 (Jan. 1975), pp. 92–103; p. 100. [hereafter "Memoir of William Logan Fisher"]

town.^[120] She married there, 25th 11 mo. 1802, WILLIAM LOGAN FISHER, son of Thomas and Sarah (Logan) Fisher.^[121] He was born at Philadelphia, 1st 10 mo. 1781.^[122] He died probably at Philadelphia, 24 September 1862.^[123] He was buried at Laurel Hill Cemetery, Philadelphia, where his wife was buried, 29 September 1862.^[124] William and his family removed to Abington Monthly Meeting in Pennsylvania where they were received on certificate 30th 11 mo. 1807.^[125] William was disowned by Frankford Monthly Meeting in Philadelphia, 24th 1 mo. 1828 for a list of many grievances by the Meeting.^[126] However, he stated in his memoir, “The conflicts that have agitated the Society of Friends have separated me much from Society affairs, whilest I still remain a member . . .”^[127]

Children of Thomas Logan and Mary (Rodman) Fisher:

- i. THOMAS RODMAN⁶ FISHER, b. New Bedford, 22 10 mo. 1803;^[128] d. Wakefield, Philadelphia Co., Penn. 11 Nov. 1861;^[129] m. Baltimore, Md., 27 Nov. 1829, LETITIA HARVEY ELLICOTT.^[130] Thomas submitted his request for disunity to Frankford Monthly Meeting, 26th 10 mo. 1827, stating, “I shall be much obliged if you will accept this my resignation to your meeting and to the Society of Friends. --- As I do not consider myself any longer accountable to your meeting; or as having any thing to do with the concerns of the society.”^[131]
- ii. SARAH LOGAN FISHER, b. New Bedford, 18 5 mo. 1806;^[132] d. Germantown, Columbia Co., Penn., 26 Dec. 1891;^[133] m. there, 26 Sept. 1826, WILLIAM WISTER;^[134] dis., Philadelphia, 26th 4 mo. 1827.^[135]

¹²⁰ Burial Register, Laurel Hill Cemetery, Philadelphia, Penn., p. 682, “Pennsylvania and New Jersey, U.S., Church and Town Records, 1669–2013,” *Ancestry.com* and “Memoir of William Logan Fisher,” p. 100. [note 119]

¹²¹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 449 [note 22] and “Memoir of William Logan Fisher,” p. 98. [note 119]

¹²² “Memoir of William Logan Fisher,” p. 94–5. [note 119]

¹²³ *The Rotches*, p. 453 [note 4] and Burial Register, Laurel Hill Cemetery, Philadelphia, Penn., p. 682, “Pennsylvania and New Jersey, U.S., Church and Town Records, 1669–2013,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹²⁴ Burial Register, Laurel Hill Cemetery, Philadelphia, Penn., p. 682, “Pennsylvania and New Jersey, U.S., Church and Town Records, 1669–2013,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹²⁵ Abington Monthly Meeting, Men’s Minutes, 1797–1811, vol. 7, p. 348, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹²⁶ Frankford Monthly Meeting, Minutes, 1816–1831, p. 197, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹²⁷ “Memoir of William Logan Fisher,” p. 102. [note 119]

¹²⁸ *New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Member Lists 1793–1816*, vol. 445, unnumbered, microfilmed in 1950 copies of original records at Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence, R.I. (now deposited at University of Massachusetts Amherst Special Collections), digitized image on FamilySearch.org. [hereafter *New Bedford MM, Member Lists*]

¹²⁹ *The Rotches*, p. 453. [note 4]

¹³⁰ *The Rotches*, p. 453. [note 4]

¹³¹ Frankford Monthly Meeting, Minutes, 1816–1831, p. 186, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹³² *New Bedford MM, Member Lists* vol. 445 [note 128] and “Memoir of William Logan Fisher,” p. 99. [not 119]

¹³³ *The Rotches*, p. 454. [note 4]

¹³⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 454. [note 4]

¹³⁵ Frankford Monthly Meeting, Minutes, 1816–1831, p. 178, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

- iii. ELIZABETH RODMAN FISHER, b. Philadelphia, 14th 9 mo. 1810;^[136] d. Philadelphia, Philadelphia Co., Penn., 6th 2 mo. 1875.^[137]

10. WILLIAM ROTCH⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth*⁴, *William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 24th 4 mo. 1786.^[138] He died at New Bedford, Massachusetts, 26 March 1855.^[139] He married at Philadelphia, 2nd 12 mo. 1813, in the Meeting House on Mulberry Street, REBECCA WALN MORGAN, daughter of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan.^[140] She was born at Philadelphia, 11th 8 mo. 1794.^[141] She died at New Bedford, 18 June 1848.^[142]

Both William R. Rodman and his wife Rebecca W. Morgan were disowned by Frankford Monthly Meeting in Pennsylvania, 1st 3 mo. 1831 for not attending meetings,^[143] though a certificate of removal for their children was dated 26th 4 mo. 1831, Frankford and received by New Bedford, 27th 10 mo. 1831.^[144]

Children of William Rotch and Rebecca Waln (Morgan) Rodman, born at Philadelphia:

- i. SAMUEL WILLIAM⁶ RODMAN, b. 30th 10 mo. 1814;^[145] d. Lincoln, Mass., 1 June 1906;^[146] m. Boston, 1 Oct. 1838, EMMA MOTLEY;^[147] disowned, 21st 4 mo. 1841 for not attending meetings.^[148]
- ii. ANNA RODMAN, b. 11th 4 mo. 1817;^[149] d. Boston, 30 Dec. 1895;^[150] m. 26 June 1838, WILLIAM. RODMAN ROBESON (son of no. 11).^[151] They were both disowned, New Bedford, 26th 10 mo. 1837 (Wm.) and 27th 12 mo. 1838 (Anna) for not attending meetings.^[152]

¹³⁶ Germantown Monthly Meeting, Membership List [beg. 1807], "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com* and "Memoir of William Logan Fisher," p. 101, where he alludes to having three children in Philadelphia after the death of his wife, Mary. [note 119]

¹³⁷ Frankford Monthly Meeting, Births and Deaths, 1788–1922, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

¹³⁸ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 165. [note 18]

¹³⁹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1855, vol. 93, p. 77.

¹⁴⁰ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Book of Marriages, 1759–1813, p. 547, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁴¹ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Northern District, Births and Deaths, 1772–1806, p. 42, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁴² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 140. [note 22]

¹⁴³ Frankford Monthly Meeting, Membership List, 1813–1885, p.127, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

¹⁴⁴ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 402, p. 51. [note 61]

¹⁴⁵ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Arch Street, Record of Births, Deaths and Burials, 1688–1826, p. 82, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁴⁶ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1906, vol. 52, p. 416.

¹⁴⁷ *The Rotches*, p. 472. [note 4]

¹⁴⁸ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 402, p. 149. [note 61]

¹⁴⁹ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Arch Street, Record of Births, Deaths and Burials, 1688–1826, p. 82, "U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935," *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁵⁰ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1895, vol. 456, p. 514.

¹⁵¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1895, vol. 456, p. 514.

¹⁵² New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 402, p. 131 (Wm.) and p. 145 (Anna). [note 61]

- iii. ALFRED RODMAN, b. 20th 10 mo. 1820;^[153] d. Sulphur Springs, Greenbrier Co., Va., 27 June 1853;^[154] m. Dedham, Mass., 8 Sept. 1847, ANNA LOTHROP MOTLEY;^[155] disowned, 28th 1 mo. 1847, for not attending meetings.^[156]
- iv. ELLEN RODMAN, b. 11th June 1824;^[157] d. 16 April 1898; m. New Bedford, 8 Sept. 1846, EDWARD MOTLEY;^[158] disowned, 26th 11 mo. 1846, for marrying outside the faith.^[159]

11. ANNA⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth*⁴, *William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 5th 11 mo. 1787.^[160] She died at New Bedford, Massachusetts, 17 June 1848.^[161] She married there, 31st 5 mo. 1810, ANDREW ROBESON, son of Peter and Martha (Livezey) Robeson.^[162] He was born at Roxborough, Philadelphia County, Pennsylvania, 18th 8 mo. 1787^[163] and died at Boston, 8 Dec. 1862.^[164] Both Anna and her husband Andrew were disowned from the New Bedford Monthly Meeting for “absenting” themselves from meetings. Andrew was disowned 27th 10 mo. 1825.^[165] Anna was subsequently disowned 24th 5 mo. 1827.^[166]

Children of Andrew and Anna (Rodman) Robeson:

- i. THOMAS RODMAN⁶ ROBESON, b. Roxborough, 22nd 6 mo. 1811;^[167] d. New Bedford, 13 Aug. 1848;^[168] m. New Bedford, 16 June 1836, in the First Congregational Church, SYBIL W. WASHBURN;^[169] disowned, 23rd 11 mo. 1848, for not attending meetings.^[170]

¹⁵³ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Arch Street, Record of Births, Deaths and Burials, 1688–1826, p. 82, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁵⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 473. [note 4]

¹⁵⁵ *The Rotches*, p. 473. [note 4]

¹⁵⁶ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 287. [note 61]

¹⁵⁷ Byberry Monthly Meeting, Births and Burials, 1740–1879, p. 75, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁵⁸ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 448. [note 22]

¹⁵⁹ New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, unnumbered. [note 25]

¹⁶⁰ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 165. [note 18]

¹⁶¹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 139. [note 22]

¹⁶² New Bedford MM Marriages 1795–1918, p. 81. [note 42]

¹⁶³ Abington Monthly Meeting, Births and Deaths 1682–1809, vol. 1, p. 119, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁶⁴ City of Boston Vital Records, Deaths 1862–1863, certificate no. 3873, City Registrar, Boston, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.

¹⁶⁵ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 309. [note 61]

¹⁶⁶ New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, p. 66. [note 25]

¹⁶⁷ Abington Monthly Meeting, Membership Book, 1809–1935, p. 68, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁶⁸ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 140. [note 22]

¹⁶⁹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 447. [note 22]

¹⁷⁰ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 330. [note 61]

- ii. WILLIAM RODMAN ROBESON, b. Roxborough, 13th 7 mo. 1814;^[171] d. Boston, 7 Nov. 1892;^[172] m. New Bedford, 26 June 1838, ANNA RODMAN (dau. of no. 10).^[173] Disownment addressed under no. 10.
- iii. ANDREW ROBESON, b. New Bedford, 17th 10 mo. 1817;^[174] d. Tiverton, R.I., 23 July 1874;^[175] m. 2 March 1843, MARY ARNOLD ALLEN;^[176] disowned, 28th 5 mo. 1840, due to “circumstances that would prevent him from uniting with us as a religious Society.”^[177]
- iv. MARTHA ROBESON, b. New Bedford, 21st 10 mo. 1820;^[178] d. Boston, 12 Jan. 1852;^[179] m. New Bedford, 21 Sept. 1841, in the First Congregational Church, ALANSON TUCKER;^[180] disowned, 24th 3 mo. 1842, “on account of her deviation in marriage . . .”^[181]
- v. FREDERIC ROBESON, b. New Bedford, 3rd 1 mo. 1823;^[182] d. there, April 1850;^[183] disowned, 22nd 10 mo. 1846, because he “has wholly abstained from the attendance of our religious meetings.”^[184]
- v. ANNA RODMAN ROBESON, b. New Bedford, 11th 3 mo. 1837;^[185] d. Southsea, Portsmouth, England, 5 March 1926;^[186] m. Brookline, Mass., 1 Jan. 1856, BRIG. GEN. WILLIAM DWIGHT, by an Episcopal minister.^[187] By the time she was born her parents were no longer members of the Society of Friends.

12. LYDIA⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth*⁴, *William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 15th 9 mo. 1790.^[188] She died at Waltham, 14 April 1869.^[189] She married, as his second wife, at New Bedford, 10th 4 mo. 1823, MICAH HASKELL RUGGLES, son of Maj. Elisha and Mary (Clapp) Ruggles.^[190] Micah was born

¹⁷¹ Abington Monthly Meeting, Membership Book, 1809–1935, p. 68, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

¹⁷² Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1892, vol. 429, p. 413.

¹⁷³ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 447. [note 22]

¹⁷⁴ *New Bedford MM Births &c*, p. 85. [note 24]

¹⁷⁵ Andrew Robeson, Death, 1874, Death Register, 1850–1932, p. 46, Town Hall, Tiverton, R.I., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

¹⁷⁶ *The Rotches*, p. 494. [note 4]

¹⁷⁷ *New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes*, vol. 402, p. 165. [note 61]

¹⁷⁸ *New Bedford MM Births &c*, p. 85. [note 24]

¹⁷⁹ *The Rotches*, p. p. 494 [note 4] and Martha Robeson tombstone, Oak Grove Cemetery, New Bedford, Mass., Memorial ID 17108093, *FindAGrave.com*.

¹⁸⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 447. [note 22]

¹⁸¹ *New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes*, vol. 431, unnumbered. [note 25]

¹⁸² *New Bedford MM Births &c*, p. 85. [note 24]

¹⁸³ Fredk. Robeson, 1850 U.S. Census, Mortality Schedule, New Bedford, Bristol County, Massachusetts, p. [134], line 5, microfilm publication T1204, roll 9 (Washington, D.C.: National Archives), digitized image on Ancestry.com.

¹⁸⁴ *New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes*, vol. 402, p. 282. [note 61]

¹⁸⁵ *The Rotches*, p. 494. [note 4]

¹⁸⁶ Anna Robeson Dwight, Death, 1926, District of Portsmouth, vol. 2B, p. 746, no. 390, General Record Office, London, England.

¹⁸⁷ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1856, vol. 100, p. 233.

¹⁸⁸ *Nantucket MM, Births, etc.*, p. 165. [note 18]

¹⁸⁹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1869, vol. 328, p. 86.

¹⁹⁰ *New Bedford Marriages 1795–1918*, p. 131–2. [note 42]

at Rochester, Massachusetts, 9 May 1791.^[191] He died at Fall River, Massachusetts, 19 Dec. 1857.^[192] Micah was a Convinced Quaker, requesting to become a member through the Longplain Preparative Meeting who brought it to the New Bedford Monthly Meeting, 25th 6 mo. 1818.^[193] After a committee, comprised of William Rotch, Jr., Cornelius Howland and Abraham Shearman, Jr. met with him, who reported they “have visited him to satisfaction, and think it best he should be received into membership,” which he was on 23rd 7 mo. 1818.^[194] Two of the committee who interviewed him, Howland and Shearman, would later be in disagreement with him as the situation over removing Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman—his mother-in-law—and Mary Rotch as Elders took center stage in the Meeting.

By 23rd 6 mo. 1825, the overseers of the Longplain Preparative Meeting had brought attention to the New Bedford Monthly Meeting that Micah had “for a long time, withdrawn himself from our religious Meetings, for which they have laboured [*sic*] with him without the desired effect . . .” New Bedford appointed Edward Wing and Shadrach Davis to talk with him.^[195] Both of these men had been in favor of the removal of Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Mary Rotch as Elders. Two months later, New Bedford would deny Micah membership through disownment, 25th 8 mo. 1825.^[196] Meanwhile, his wife, Lydia, would be disowned, 28th 2 mo. 1828, also for not attending meetings.^[197]

Children of Micah Haskell and Lydia (Rodman) Ruggles:

- i. GEORGE WILLIAM⁶ RUGGLES, b. Rochester, 7 Feb. 1824;^[198] d. 23rd 8 mo. 1825.
- ii. MARY CLAPP RUGGLES, b. Rochester, 17 Jan. 1826;^[199] d. Waltham, 10 Jan. 1892;^[200] m. Fall River, 6 Oct. 1847, Rev. Benjamin Worcester, son of Rev. Thomas and Alice Worcester.^[201] She was granted a certificate of removal from New Bedford, 22nd 12 mo. 1836, to “Swanzy” [*sic*].^[202] Swansea Montly Meeting accepted her, 27 3rd mo. 1837.^[203] If she hadn’t already been disowned, she would have been shortly after her marriage for marrying outside the faith.

¹⁹¹ *Vital Records of Rochester, Massachusetts to the Year 1850*, 2 vols. (Boston, Mass.: New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1914), vol. 1, p. 255. [hereafter *Rochester VRs to 1850*]

¹⁹² Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1857, vol. 111, p. 113.

¹⁹³ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 198. [note 61]

¹⁹⁴ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 199. [note 61]

¹⁹⁵ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 302. [note 61]

¹⁹⁶ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 306. [note 61]

¹⁹⁷ New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, p. 75. [note 25]

¹⁹⁸ *Rochester VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 255. [note 191]

¹⁹⁹ *Rochester VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 255. [note 191]

²⁰⁰ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1892, vol. 428, p. 391.

²⁰¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1847, vol. 4, p. 141.

²⁰² New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, unpagged. [note 25]

²⁰³ Swansea Monthly Meeting, Men’s Minutes, 1824–1844, vol. 3, p. 217, microfilmed in 1950 copies of original records at Moses Brown School, Providence, R.I. (now deposited at University of Massachusetts Amherst Special Collections), digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

- iii. ALFRED RUGGLES, b. Fall River, 18 Sept. 1828; d. 12 Sept. 1829.^[204] He was born after his parents had been disowned.
- iv. ALBERT RUGGLES, b. Fall River, 1 Dec. 1830; d. 13 Dec. 1832.^[205] He was born after his parents were disowned.

13. SAMUEL⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth*⁴, *William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, 24th 3 mo. 1792.^[206] He died at New Bedford, 1st 8 mo. 1876.^[207] He married at Cow Neck, Queens County (now Nassau Co.), New York, 2nd 11 mo. 1819, HANNAH HAYDOCK PRIOR, daughter of Edmund and Hannah (Haydock) Prior.^[208] She was born in New York, 11th 9 mo. 1794.^[209] She died at New Bedford, 5 October 1876.^[210]

Despite all that would transpire within his family after the decisions made about his mother and aunt, Samuel remained a life-long, birthright Quaker. He was instrumental in the establishment of the Free Public Library and served as a trustee of the Friends Academy in New Bedford for 63 years.^[211] His wife and most of his children would elect to attend a different denomination after the unpleasantness of the way the New Bedford Monthly Meeting handled Elizabeth (Rotch) Rodman and Mary Rotch. Hannah would be disowned by New Bedford, 24th 6 mo. 1847.^[212]

Children of Samuel and Hanna Haycock (Prior) Rodman, born at New Bedford:

- i. MARY⁶ RODMAN, b. 10th 12 mo. 1820;^[213] d. New Bedford, 15th 8 mo. 1821.^[214]
- ii. EDMUND RODMAN (twin), b. 18th 1 mo. 1824;^[215] d. New Bedford, 7 May 1902, unmar.^[216] He was disowned at New Bedford, 23rd 11 mo. 1848, for not attending meetings.^[217]
- iii. MARY RODMAN (twin), b. 18th 1 mo. 1824;^[218] d. New Bedford, 2nd 5 mo. 1847.^[219]

²⁰⁴ Alfred Ruggles, birth, 1828 and death, 1829, vol. 2, p. 80, Town Hall, Fall River, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²⁰⁵ Albert Ruggles, birth, 1830 and death, 1832, vol. 2, p. 80, Town Hall, Fall River, Mass., digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²⁰⁶ Nantucket MM, Births, etc. p. 165. [note 18]

²⁰⁷ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86 [note 24] and Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1876, vol. 382, p. 122.

²⁰⁸ William Wade Hinshaw, *Encyclopedia of American Quaker Genealogy*, 6 vols. (1936–1950; reprint, Baltimore, Md.: Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc., 1991–1994), vol. 3, p. 440, citing Westbury Monthly Meeting. [hereafter Hinshaw, *American Quaker Genealogy*]

²⁰⁹ Hinshaw, *American Quaker Genealogy*, vol. 3, p. 259 [note 208]

²¹⁰ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1876, vol. 283, p. 126.

²¹¹ *The Rotches*, p. 523. [note 4]

²¹² New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, unpagued. [note 25]

²¹³ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

²¹⁴ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

²¹⁵ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

²¹⁶ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1902, vol. 528, p. 309.

²¹⁷ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 402, p. 330. [note 61]

²¹⁸ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

²¹⁹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 140 [note 22] and New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

- iv. THOMAS ROTCH RODMAN, b. 27 Sept. 1825;^[220] d. New Bedford, 18 Dec. 1905;^[221] m. there, 4 Oct. 1853, ANN SMITH MILES, dau. of John and Hannah Miles;^[222] div. in 1865;^[223] disowned, 23rd 11 mo. 1848, for not attending meetings.^[224]
- v. FRANCIS RODMAN, b. 27 July 1827; d. Concord, Mass., 8 Aug. 1914; m. New Bedford, 15 Sept. 1853, ELIZABETH BROWNE HUSSEY, dau. of George and Hetty Hussey;^[225] disowned, 24th 11 mo. 1853, for his “deviation in marriage.”^[226]
- vi. SUSAN EMLÉN RODMAN, b. 19 Aug. 1829;^[227] d. 17 March 1880, unmar.;^[228] disowned, 26th 3 mo. 1857, for neglecting “the attendance of our meetings and have united in membership with another religious denomination.”^[229]
- vii. CHARLES RODMAN, b. 5 Aug. 1831;^[230] d. New Bedford, 18th 11 mo. 1834.^[231]
- viii. ELLEN H. RODMAN, b. 16 Oct. 1833;^[232] d. New Bedford, 27 Jan. 1924;^[233] m. there, 14 June 1859, Horatio H. Hathaway, son of Nathaniel and Anna Hathaway;^[234] disowned, 26th 3 mo. 1857 with her sister Susan and for the same reasons.^[235]

14. SARAH⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth*⁴, *William*³, *Joseph*², *William*¹) was born at Nantucket, Massachusetts, 31 October 1793.^[236] She died at New Bedford, 26 September 1888.^[237] She married there, 3rd 6 mo. 1819, CHARLES WALN MORGAN, son of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan.^[238] He was born in Philadelphia, 14th 9 mo. 1796.^[239] He died at New Bedford, 7 April 1861.^[240]

Charles could be found speaking up regarding the situation of Sarah’s mother and aunt. Eventually he and his family would remove to the First Congre-

²²⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 441. [note 22]

²²¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1905, vol. 70, p. 507.

²²² Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1853, vol. 69, p. 130.

²²³ *The Rotches*, p. 524. [note 4]

²²⁴ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 330. [note 61]

²²⁵ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1853, vol. 69, p. 130.

²²⁶ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, fol. 79v. [note 61]

²²⁷ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 392. [note 22]

²²⁸ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1880, vol. 379, p. 126.

²²⁹ New Bedford Monthly Meeting, Women’s Minutes, 1850–1894, p. 70, part of New England Yearly Meeting Records, MS902, N493, 09:B4, bound volume, Special Collections and University Archives, University of Massachusetts Amherst. [hereafter New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, 1850–1894]

²³⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 391. [note 22]

²³¹ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 86. [note 24]

²³² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 391. [note 22]

²³³ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1924, vol. 53, p. 464.

²³⁴ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1859, vol. 126, p. 96.

²³⁵ New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, 1850–1894, p. 70. [note 230]

²³⁶ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 165. [note 18]

²³⁷ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1888, vol. 391, p. 162.

²³⁸ New Bedford MM Marriages 1795–1918, p. 120–2. [note 42]

²³⁹ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Northern District, Births and Deaths, 1772–1806, p. 42, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

²⁴⁰ Massachusetts Vital Records, vol. 147, p. 115.

gational Church, where they could be found owning pew number 76, in a list dated 1824.^[241] As a result, Sarah was disowned by New Bedford, 24th 7 mo. 1828, “for neglect in the attendance of our meetings, and attending those of another denomination.”^[242] Charles, for the same reason, was disowned 28th 8 mo. 1828.^[243]

Children of Charles Waln and Sarah (Rodman) Morgan, born at New Bedford:

- i. EMILY MORGAN, b. 13 Dec. 1821;^[244] d. New Bedford, 18 Aug. 1861;^[245] m. there, in 1st Cong. Church, 24 May 1842, WILLIAM JAMES ROTCH (see no. 17);^[246] disowned, 25th 5 mo. 1843, for marrying out of the order of our Society.^[247] This is the couple that resulted in the research of this families break with the Society of Friends.
- ii. SAMUEL RODMAN MORGAN, b. 18 Aug. 1824;^[248] d. London, England, 21 Nov. 1891;^[249] m. Philadelphia, 17 June 1854, JOSEPHINE WHARTON CRAIG;^[250] disowned, 25th 6 mo. 1846, after stating he “should prefer to attend the meetings of another religious society.”^[251]
- iii. ISABEL MORGAN, b. 21 Oct. 1829;^[252] d. New Bedford, 28 May 1847, unmar.^[253] She was born after her parents were disowned.
- iv. ELIZABETH RODMAN MORGAN, b. 20 Feb. 1833;^[254] d. New Bedford 14 Sept. 1923;^[255] m. there, 5 Nov. 1855, GEORGE HUSSEY, son of George and Hatty H. Hussey.^[256]
- v. CLARA MORGAN, b. 1 Dec. 1836;^[257] d. New Bedford, 24 Aug. 1919;^[258] m. as 2nd wife, 11 Jan. 1866, WILLIAM JAMES ROTCH (see no. 17, who had m. 1st her older sister Emily).^[259]

15. BENJAMIN⁵ RODMAN (*Elizabeth⁴, William³, Joseph², William¹*) was born at Nantucket, 25th 11 mo. 1794.^[260] He died at New Bedford, 29 September

²⁴¹ First Unitarian Church Records, 1730–1977, [New Bedford], Mss 42, Box 8, Series D., Pew Records, 1813–1923, Sub-Series 1, Deeds, 1813–1878, Folder 1, 1813, 1817, 1818–1826, New Bedford Whaling Museum, New Bedford, Mass.

²⁴² New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, p. 79. [note 25]

²⁴³ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 2. [note 61]

²⁴⁴ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 332. [note 22]

²⁴⁵ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1861, vol. 147, p. 117.

²⁴⁶ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 377. [note 22]

²⁴⁷ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 209. [note 61]

²⁴⁸ *The Rotches*, p. 532. [note 4]

²⁴⁹ Samuel Rodman Morgan, Death Notice, *The Boston Transcript* (Boston, Mass.), Tuesday, November 24, 1891, p. 4, col. 6 and Samuel Rodman Morgan, Death, 1891, District of St. James Westminster, vol. 1A, p. 367, no. 2, General Record Office, London, England.

²⁵⁰ *The Rotches*, p. 532. [note 4]

²⁵¹ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 275–6. [note 61]

²⁵² *The Rotches*, p. 531. [note 4]

²⁵³ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 117. [note 22]

²⁵⁴ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1923, vol. 59, p. 202.

²⁵⁵ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1923, vol. 59, p. 202.

²⁵⁶ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1855, vol. 87, p. 106.

²⁵⁷ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1919, vol. 77, p. 51.

²⁵⁸ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1919, vol. 77, p. 51.

²⁵⁹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1866, vol. 189, p. 113.

²⁶⁰ Nantucket MM, Births, etc., p. 165. [note 18]

1876.^[261] He married 6th 4 mo. 1820, Susan Waln Morgan, daughter of Thomas and Ann (Waln) Morgan.^[262] She was born in Philadelphia, 5th 9 mo. 1802.^[263] She died at New Bedford, 11 November 1871.^[264]

Benjamin was one of the more vocal family members when it came to the situation with his mother and aunt. He would not keep silent when some of the men tried to record that an agreement “in unity” of all the men who were present be put in the minutes during the meeting held 2 mo. 1824. “From the silence observed by the Elders on the inquiry whether that meet’g was united in the complaint, he should make the same inference with his brother, that it was not, & in addition to that silence, from the testimony he received he was confident unity did not exist.”^[265]

More of Benjamin’s involvement in the discussion will be seen in the next part of this article. However, as a result, the Overseers of the Men’s Meeting, on 22nd 4 mo. 1824, would complain, “We have to inform the Meeting that Benjamin Rodman has so far manifested disunity with Society . . . and has also deviated from the good order recommended in the Discipline . . .”^[266] Benjamin was subsequently disowned, 26th 8 mo. 1824.^[267] His wife, Susan, was disowned for not attending meetings, 22nd 3 mo. 1827.^[268]

Children of Benjamin and Susan Waln (Morgan) Rodman, born at New Bedford:

- i. ELIZABETH⁶ RODMAN, b. 24th 2 mo. 1821;^[269] d. Jamaica Plain, Mass., 28 Feb. 1897;^[270] m. 1 Oct. 1841, FRANCIS MINOT WELD;^[271] disowned, 26th 5 mo. 1842, for “her marriage contrary to the order of our society.”^[272]
- ii. WILLIAM LOGAN RODMAN, b. 7th 3 mo. 1822;^[273] d. Port Hudson, East Baton Rouge Parish, La.,^[274] 27 May 1863;^[275] disowned, 25th 6 mo. 1846, for not attending meetings.^[276]

²⁶¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1876, vol. 283, p. 125.

²⁶² Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Marriages 1814–1949, pp. 61–62, Department of Friends’ Records, Arch Street, Philadelphia, vol. V, digitized image on FamilySearch.org.

²⁶³ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Northern District, Births and Deaths, 1772–1806, p. 42, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

²⁶⁴ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1871, vol. 238, p. 127.

²⁶⁵ FHL/Swarthmore Anonymous Journal, p. 77. [note 49]

²⁶⁶ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401 p. 279. [note 61]

²⁶⁷ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 289. [note 61]

²⁶⁸ New Bedford MM Women’s Meetings, vol. 431, p. 64. [note 25]

²⁶⁹ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 85. [note 24]

²⁷⁰ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1897, vol. 474, p. 87.

²⁷¹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 448. [note 22]

²⁷² New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, unpagged. [note 25]

²⁷³ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 85. [note 24]

²⁷⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 540. [note 4]

²⁷⁵ Lt. Col. Wm. Logan Rodman, 38th Infantry, Massachusetts, O–Z, p. 53, “U.S., Registers of Deaths of Volunteers, 1861–1865,” *Ancestry.com*.

²⁷⁶ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 402, p. 273. [note 61]

- iii. SUSAN RODMAN, b. 20 Oct. 1841;^[277] d. Karlbad, Karlsruhe, Baden-Württemberg, Germany, 10 July 1904;^[278] m. London, England, 8 Oct. 1885, Fabio Juliano Caccia.^[279] She was born after her parents were disowned.

16. SARAH⁵ ROTCH (*William⁴, William³, Joseph², William¹*) was born at Nantucket, Massachusetts, 3rd 6 mo. 1786.^[280] She died New Bedford, 9 May 1860.^[281] She married there 29 October 1807, JAMES ARNOLD, son of Thomas and Mary (Brown) Arnold.^[282] He was born at North Providence, Rhode Island, 9th 9 mo. 1781.^[283] He died at New Bedford, Massachusetts, 4 November 1868.^[284] He was disowned after requesting to be released from the Society of Friends at New Bedford, 25th 7 mo. 1822.^[285] Sarah, his wife, was disowned at New Bedford, 25th 8 mo. 1825 for attending places with music and attending another denomination.^[286]

Child of James and Sarah (Rotch) Arnold:

- i. ELIZABETH ROTCH⁶ ARNOLD, b. New Bedford, 1st 1 mo. 1809;^[287] d. there, 26 Oct. 1860;^[288] m. New Bedford, 17 March 1859, CHARLES M. TUTTLE, son of Horatio and Elizabeth Tuttle;^[289] disowned, 25th 8 mo. 1825, for attending places with music and attending another denomination.^[290]

17. JOSEPH⁵ ROTCH (*William⁴, William³, Joseph², William¹*) was born at Dartmouth, 30th 11 mo. 1790.^[291] He died at New Bedford, 10 November 1839.^[292] He married at Philadelphia, 2nd 6 mo. 1814, ANNA SMITH, daughter of James and Anne (Ridgway) Smith.^[293] She was born at Philadelphia,^[294] 2 June 1795.^[295] She died at New Bedford, 6th 11 mo. 1842.^[296]

²⁷⁷ *The Rotches*, p. 540. [note 4]

²⁷⁸ *The Rotches*, p. 540. [note 4]

²⁷⁹ Caccia-Rodman, Marriages, 1885, District of St. George Hanover Square, vol. 1A, p. 758, no. 75. Genealogical Records Office, London, England.

²⁸⁰ *Nantucket VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 439. [note 20]

²⁸¹ Sarah Rotch Arnold, tombstone, Oak Grove Cemetery, New Bedford, Mass., Memorial ID 5496734, *FindAGrave.com* and Sarah R. Arnold, 1860 U.S. Census, Mortality Schedule, New Bedford, Bristol County, Massachusetts, p. 13, line 11, microfilm publication T1204, roll 17 (Washington, D.C.: National Archives), digitized image on *Ancestry.com*.

²⁸² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 451. [note 22]

²⁸³ *Arnold's Rhode Island VRs*, vol. 7, p. 245. [note 38]

²⁸⁴ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1868, vol. 211, p. 133.

²⁸⁵ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 401, p. 255. [note 61]

²⁸⁶ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 42. [note 25]

²⁸⁷ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 4. [note 24]

²⁸⁸ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1860, vol. 138, p. 104.

²⁸⁹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1859, vol. 126, p. 93.

²⁹⁰ New Bedford MM Women's Minutes, vol. 431, p. 42. [note 25]

²⁹¹ *Dartmouth VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 203. [note 64]

²⁹² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 141. [note 22]

²⁹³ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Northern District, Marriages, 1772–1836, p. 313–4, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

²⁹⁴ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1893, vol. 436, p. 290.

²⁹⁵ *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

²⁹⁶ New Bedford MM Births &c, p. 87. [note 24]

Joseph and his family were received by certificate from Philadelphia to New Bedford, 11 mo. 1819.^[297] Joseph was disowned at New Bedford, 26th 8 mo. 1824.^[298] During the meeting held 22nd 4 mo. 1825, the Overseers lodged a complaint against him for his “given countenance to amusement . . . by being present at places where music dancing were performed . . .” Also, they said he was holding company with individuals who had been disowned and was willing to promote and to attend meetings of these other individuals.^[299]

Children of Joseph and Anne (Smith) Rotch:

- i. ELIZABETH⁶ ROTCH, b. Philadelphia, 13th 5 mo. 1815;^[300] d. Milton, Mass., 14 Jan. 1884;^[301] m. New Bedford, 25 April 1836, REV. JOSEPH ANGIER;^[302] disowned, 26th 9 mo. 1836, for marrying “out of the order of our society.”^[303]
- ii. BENJAMIN SMITH ROTCH, b. Philadelphia, 4th 3 mo. 1817;^[304] d. Milton, 14 Aug. 1882;^[305] m. Boston, 22 Jan. 1846, ANNIE B. LAWRENCE, dau. of Abbott and Katharine Lawrence;^[306] disowned, 21st 4 mo 1841, for not attending meetings, indicating he “preferred attending those of another denomination.”^[307]
- iii. WILLIAM JAMES ROTCH, b. Philadelphia, 2nd 5 mo. 1819;^[308] d. New Bedford, 17 Aug. 1893;^[309] m. (1) New Bedford, 24 May 1842, EMILY MORGAN (see no. 14);^[310] m. (2) New Bedford, 11 Jan. 1866, CLARA MORGAN (see no. 14);^[311] disowned, 27th 4 mo. 1842, for not attending meetings.^[312]
- iv. RODMAN ROTCH, b. 19 Sept. 1820;^[313] d. Louisville, Jefferson Co., Ky., 17 March 1854;^[314] m. Philadelphia, 15 May 1843, Helen Morgan, dau. of

²⁹⁷ Philadelphia Monthly Meeting, Western District, List of Members, 1814–1820, p. 36, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

²⁹⁸ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 288. [note 61]

²⁹⁹ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 284. [note 61]

³⁰⁰ Newton Monthly Meeting [Camden, N.J.], Births and Deaths, 1814–1883, p. 19, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

³⁰¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1884, vol. 356, p. 257.

³⁰² *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 451. [note 22]

³⁰³ New Bedford MM Women’s Minutes, vol. 431, unpag. [note 25]

³⁰⁴ Newton Monthly Meeting [Camden, N.J.], Births and Deaths, 1814–1883, p. 20, “U.S., Quaker Meeting Records, 1681–1935,” *Ancestry.com*.

³⁰⁵ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1882, vol. 338, p. 257.

³⁰⁶ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 451. [note 22]

³⁰⁷ New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 175. [note 61]

³⁰⁸ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1893, vol. 436, p. 290 and *The Rotches*, p. 414. [note 4]

³⁰⁹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1893, vol. 436, p. 290.

³¹⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 2, p. 377. [note 22]

³¹¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Marriage, 1866, vol. 189, p. 113.

³¹² New Bedford MM Men’s Minutes, vol. 401, p. 188. [note 61]

³¹³ *The Rotches*, p. 415 [note 4] and Rodman Rotch, tombstone, Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass., Memorial ID 220043115, *FindAGrave.com*.

³¹⁴ *The Rotches*, p. 415 [note 4] and Rodman Rotch, tombstone, Mount Auburn Cemetery, Cambridge, Mass., Memorial ID 220043115, *FindAGrave.com*.

Thomas Waln and Hannah (Griffitts) Morgan;^[315] disowned, for not attending meetings and marrying outside the faith.^[316]

v. JAMES SMITH ROTCH, b. 30 Aug. 1822;^[317] d. 11 Nov. 1822.^[318]

vi. JOANNA ROTCH, b. 14 June 1824;^[319] d. 8 Aug. 1824.^[320]

vii. JOANNA ROTCH, b. New Bedford, 3 Sept. 1826;^[321] d. Milton, 28 Nov. 1911, unmar.^[322]

(to be continued)



³¹⁵ Rotch-Morgan, Marriage, 1843, no. 3576, James P. Parke's, Records of Births, Marriages and Deaths of Many of the Acquaintances of James P. Parke (app. Dates, 1750–1850), Mss. Am 1111, Historical Society of Pennsylvania, Philadelphia, Penn., "Pennsylvania and New Jersey, U.S., Church and Town Records, 1669–2013," *Ancestry.com*.

³¹⁶ New Bedford MM Men's Minutes, vol. 402, p. 232. [note 61]

³¹⁷ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 394 [note 22] and *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

³¹⁸ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 141 [note 22] and *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

³¹⁹ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 1, p. 394 [note 22] and *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

³²⁰ *New Bedford VRs to 1850*, vol. 3, p. 141 [note 22] and *The Rotches*, p. 411. [note 4]

³²¹ Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1911, vol. 69, p. 494.

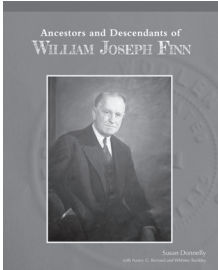
³²² Massachusetts Vital Records, Death, 1911, vol. 69, p. 494.

Quarterly News



Please note these recent NEHGS developments. For more news, and more detail, read *American Ancestors* magazine and, of course, consult AmericanAncestors.org, your portal to all that NEHGS has to offer.

New Publication



Ancestors and Descendants of William Joseph Finn

By Susan Donnelly

with Nancy G. Bernard and Whitney Buckley

8-1/4 x 10 hardcover, 198 pages, illustrated

Vibrant threads of ambition and persistence run through the five Finn generations detailed in this truly American story. This book traces the line of descent from Peter Finn (ca. 1800–ca. 1847), a tenant farmer in County Longford, Ireland, through three generations, to the eleven children of Neponset Woolen Mill owner, William Joseph Finn of Canton, Massachusetts.

Coming in 2024!

The Great Migration Immigrants to New England, 1636–1638

Volume 1, A-Be

By Ian Watson

This first volume in the third series of the Great Migration Study Project contains new research to uncover the details of 129 immigrants who came to New England between 1636 and 1638 and appear in the Great Migration Directory. An appendix includes eight sketches that fall within the alphabetic range of the present volume but had been incorrectly dated or simply overlooked the first time around.

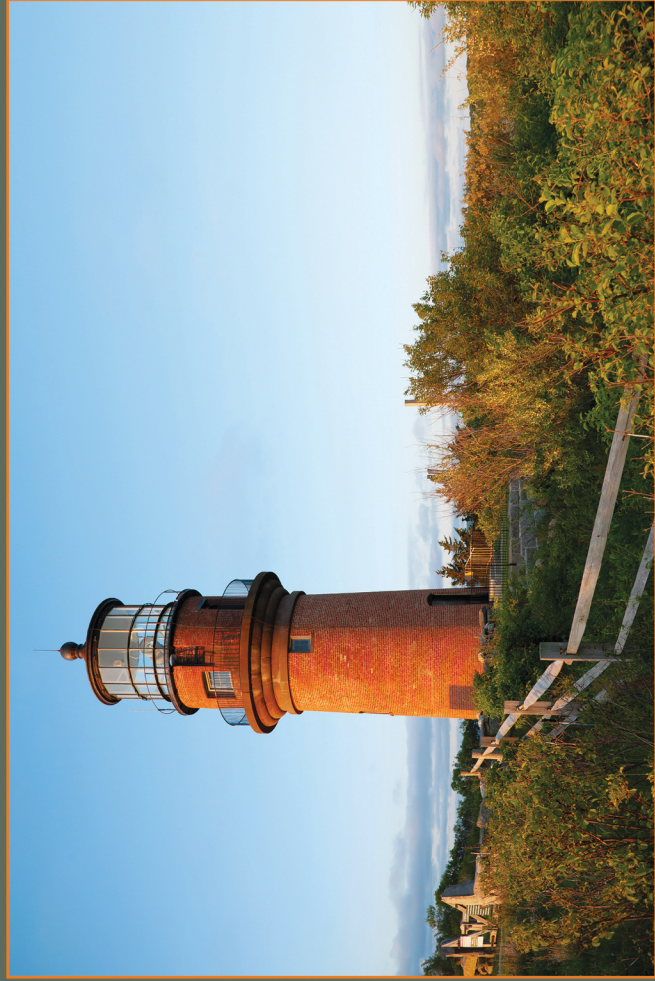
A Resource for Your Future

Don't have your estate plan in place and don't know where to start?

American Ancestors has partnered with FreeWill to give our community access to a free estate planning tool. In just 20 minutes, you can create a plan that gives you peace of mind, knowing the people you love and the causes you care about are protected well into the future.

To start your free plan, please visit www.FreeWill.com/AmericanAncestors

If you have questions about this resource, please contact Ted MacMahon, Assistant Vice President, tmacmahon@nehgs.org, 617-549-0300.



Aquinnah Lighthouse, also referred to as Gay Head Light, Martha's Vineyard, Massachusetts.
Henry and Remember Luce and many of their descendants lived on Martha's Vineyard; see pp.245–257.